

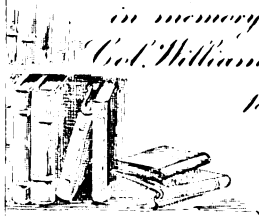




*Library of the University of Michigan
The Coyle Collection.*

*Miss Jean L. Coyle
of Detroit*

*in memory of her brother
Col. William Henry Coyle.
1894.*





PK
2287
PS
1370

25

C Bloane
Sumner Square
1871

Pierces Supererogation :

OR

5-7197

A NEW PRAYSE OF
THE OLD ASSE.

*A Preparative to certaine larger Discourses,
intituled*

NASHES S. FAME.

Gabriell Harvey.



LONDON

Imprinted by Iohn Wolfe.

1593.

111

INTRODUCTION.

THIS small tract, in binding, should be made to precede the production, sent some months ago, entitled "Pierce's Supererogation," by Gabriel Harvey, 4to., 1593.

It may seem that Harvey was much laughed at for the vanity and egotism of what follows, prefixed, as it was, to the earlier copies of his "Pierce's Supererogation;" he, or his friends, therefore withdrew it, and most copies of the tract are without it. One of these we formerly reprinted; but finding, with the aid of a learned friend, that the curious matter now issued also strictly belongs to the work, although apparently suppressed, we have put it in type, with the view that the recipients of our reprint, if they think fit, may cause it to introduce the reproduction of "Pierce's Supererogation," which we heretofore forwarded.

We were then hardly aware of the importance of this preliminary supplement (if we may so call it) which, as far as we now know, only belongs to two copies of the original. One of these is in our great national book-depository, and there also anybody may compare it with a second copy of the same publication which is without it. Our own exemplar is defective in this respect, as well as that in the Bodleian Library.

The main interest of what follows is of a personal kind as regards Harvey; and it serves to show that his self-admiration was so impervious that it could scarcely distinguish between applause and irony. His friends, however, knew the difference; and perhaps we are indebted to them (Spencer being one) for the deficiency in most of the known copies of "Pierce's Supererogation". The variation in the paper, and the needless repetition of the identical title-page (a course we have so far imitated) establishes sufficiently that the omission was an afterthought.

J. P. C.

*To my very gentle, and liberal Friends, M. Barnabe Barnes,
M. John Thorius, M. Anthony Chewt, and every
favorable Reader.*

LOVING M. Barnabe, M. John, and M. Antony (for the rest of my partiall Commenders must pardon me, till the print be better acquainted with their names) I have lately received your thrife-curtious letters, with the overplus of your thrife-sweet Sonnets annexed: the liberallest gifts, I beleeve, that ever you bestowed upon so slight occasion, and the very prodigallest fruites of your flourishing wittes. Whose onely default is, not your, but my default, that the matter is nothing correspondent to the manner; and miselfe must either grosely forget miselfe, or franckly acknowledge mi simple selfe an unworthy subject of so worthy commendations: which I cannot read without blushing, repeate without shame, or remember without grieve, that I come so exceeding-short in so excessive great accountes; the summes of your rich largesse, not of my poore desert, and percase devised to advertise me what I should be, or to signifie what you wish[me] to be; not to declare what I am, or to insinuate what I may be. Eloquence and curtesie were ever bountifull in the amplifying veine; and it hath bene reputed a frendly pollicy to encourage their loving acquaintance to labour the attainment of those perfections, which they blason in them, as already atcheived. Either some such intention you have, by way of stratageme, to awaken my negligence, or enkindle my confidence; or you are disposed

B

by way of civility to make me unreasonably beholding unto you for your extreme affection : which I must either leave unrequited, or recompense affection with affection, and commend me unto you with your owne stratageme, fitter to animate fresher spirites, or to whet finer edges. Little other use can I, or the world, reape of those great-great commendations, wherewith you and divers other orient wittes have newly furcharged me, by tendring so many kinde apologies in my behalfe, and presenting so many sharpe invectives against my adversaries : unlesse also you purposed to make me notably ashamed of my confessed insufficiency, guilty of so manifold imperfections, in respect of the least semblance of those imputed singularities. Whatsoever your intendment in an overflowing affection was, I am none of those that greedily furette of self-conceit, or sottishly hugge their own babyes. Narcissus was a fayre boy, but a boy : Suffenus a noble braggard, but a braggard : Nestor a sweet-tongued old man, but an old man ; and Tully (whom I honour in his virtues, and excuse in his oversightes) an eloquent self-loover, but a self-loover. He that thought to make himselfe famous with his overweening and braving *Il'e, Il'e, Il'e*, might perhaps nourrish an aspiring imagination to imitate his *Ego, Ego, Ego*, so gloriously reiterated in his gallant Orations. Some smirking minions are fine fellows in their owne heades, and some cranke princocks jolly men in their owne humours : as desperate in resolution as the dowieft ranke of errant knights ; and as coye in phantasie as the nicest sort of simpring damosels, that in their owne glasses find no creature so bewtiful, or amiable, as their delitious selves. I have beheld, and who hath not seene ? some lofty conceites,

towring very high, and coying themselves sweetly on their owne amounting wings, young feathers of old Icarus. The gay peacocke is woondrouly enamored upon the glittering fanne of his owne gorgious taile, and weeneth himselfe worthy to be crowned the Prince of birds, and to be enthronished in the chaire of supreme excellency. Would Christ, the greene popinjay, with his newfangled jestes, as new as Newgate, were not asmuch to say, as his own idol. Queint wittes must have a priviledge to prank-up their dainty limmes, and to fawne upon their owne tricky devices; but they that unpartially know themselves, severely examine their owne abilities, uprightly counterpoise defectes with sufficiencies, frankly confesse the greatest part of their knowledge to be the least part of their ignorance, advisedly weigh the difficulties of the painfull and toylsome way, the hard maintenance of credit easely gotten, the impossible satisfaction of unsatisfiable expectation: the uncertaine ficklenesse of private phantasie, and the certaine brittlenesse of publique fame, are not lightly bewitched with a fonde doting upon their owne plumes; and they that deeply consider upon the weakenesse of inward frailty, the casualtie of outward fortune, the detraction of envie, the virulency of malice, the counter-policy of ambition, and a hundred-hundred impeachments of growing reputation; that aswell divinely as philosophically have learned to loove the gentlenesse of Humanity, to embrace the mildnesse of Modestie, to kisse the meekenesse of Humilitie, to loath the odiousnesse of Pride, to assuage the egreness of Spite, to prevent the vengeance of Hatred, to reap the sweet fruites of Temperance, to tread the smooth path of Securitie, to take the firme course of Assurance, and to enjoy the felicitie of

contentment; that judiciously have framed themselves to carry mindes, like their bodies and fortunes, as apperteineth unto them, that would be loth to overreach in presumptuous conceit: they, I say, and all they that would rather underly the reproche of obscurity, then overcharge their mediocritie with an illusive opinion of extraordinary furniture, and I wot not what imaginarie complementes, are readier, and a thousand times readier, to returne the greatest prayes, where they are debt, then to accept the meanest, where they are almes. And I could nominate some, that in effect make the same reckoning of letters, sonnets, orations, or other writings commendatory, that they do of meate without nourishment, of hearbes without vertue, of plants without fruite, of a lampe without oyle, a linke without light, or a fier without heate. Onely some of us are not so devoide of good manner, but we conceive what belongeth to civile duty, and will ever be prest to interteine curtesie with curtesie, and to requite any frendship with frendship; unfainedly desirous rather to recompense in deedes, then to glose or paint in wordes. You may easely persuade me to publish that was long sithence finished in writing, and is now almost dispatched in print: (the amendes must be addressed in some other more materiall treatise, or more formal discourse; and haply *Nashes S. Fame* may supply some defectes of *Pierces Supererogation*;) but to suffer your thrise-affectionate letters and sonets, or rather your thrise-lavish benevolences to be published, which so farre surmount not onely the mediocrity of my present endeavour, but even the possibility of any my future emproovement, I could not be persuaded by any eloquence or importunacy in the world, were I not as monstiously re-

viled by some other without reason, as I am excessively extolled by you without cause. In which case he may seeme to a discreet enemy excusable, to an indifferent friend justifiable, that is not transported with his owne passion, but relyeth on the judgement of the learnedest, and referreth himselfe to the practise of the wisest; in the one, esteeming Plutarch or Homer as an hundred autors; in the other, valuing Cato or Scipio as a thousand examples. I never read or heard of any respective or considerate person, under the degree of those that might revenge at pleasure, contemne with authority, assure themselves from common obloquy, or commande publique reputation (mighty men may finde it a pollicy to take a singular or extraordinary course) so carelesse of his owne credit, so recklesse of the present time, so senselesse of the posterity, so negligent in occurents of consequence, so dissolute in his proceedings, so prodigall of his name, so devoide of all regarde, so bereft of common sense, so vilely base, or so hugely hawtie of minde, that in case of infamous imputation, or unworthy reproch, notoriously scattered-abroad, thought it not requisite, or rather necessary, to stand upon his owne defence according to equity, and even to labour his own commendation according to the presented occasion. Discourses yeeld plenty of reasons; and histories affourde store of examples. It is no vain-glory to permit with consideration that abused modesty hath affected with discretion. It is vanity to controul that true honour hath practised; and folly to condemne that right wisdom hath allowed. If any dislike immodesty indeede, despise vanity indeede, reprove arrogancy indeede, or loath vain-glory indeede, I am as forward with tongue and hart as the foremost of the forwardest;

and, were my pen answerable, perhaps at occasion it should not greatly lagge behinde. To accomplish or aduance any vertuous purpose (sith it is now enforced to be stirring), it might easely be entreated, even to the uttermost extent of that little-little possibility, wherewith it hath pleased the greatest to endowe it. Howbeit curtesie is as ready to overloade with prayse, as malice eger to overthrow with reproch. Both overshoot, as the manner is; but malice is the Divell. For my poore part, I hope the one shall do me as little harme as fayre weather in my jorney; I am furer the other hath done me more good then was intended, and shall never puddle or annoy the course of the cleere running water. Albeit I have studied much, and learned little, yet I have learned to gleane some handfulls of corne out-of the rankest cockle; to make choice of the most fragrant flowers of humanitie, the most vertuous hearbes of philosophie, the most soveraine frutes of government, and the most heavenly manna of Divinitie; to be acquainted with the fayrest, provided for the fowlest, delighted with the temperatest, pleased with the meanest, and contented with all weather. Greater men may professe, and can atchieve greater matters; I thanke God I know the length—that is, the shortnes—of mine owne foote. If it be any mans pleasure to extenuate my sufficiency in other knowledge, or practise, to impeach my ability in wordes or deedes, to debase my fortune, to abridge my commendations, or to annihilate my fame, he shall finde a cold adversary of him that hath layed hoat passions awatering, and might easely be induced to be the invective of his owne non-proficiency. Onely he craveth leave to estimate his credit, and to value his honesty, as behooveth every man that regardeth any

good : and if withall it be his unfained request, that order should repeale disorder, moderation restraine licentiousnesse, discretion abandon vanity, mildnesse assuage choller, meeknesse alay arrogancy, consideration reclaime rashnesse, indifference attemper passion, curtesy mitigate, charity appease, and unity attone debate—pardon him. Or, in case nothing will prevaile with fury but fury, and nothing can winne desired amity but pretended hostility, that must drive-out one nail with another, and beat-away one wedge with another, according to the Latin proverbe—pardon him also, that in the resolution of a good minde will commaund what he cannot entreat, and extort what he cannot persuade. That little may be done with no great adoo ; and, seeing it may as surely as easely be done, I am humbly to beseech established wisedome to winke at one experiment of adventurous folly, never before embarked in any such action, and ever to eschewe the like with a chary regard, where any other mediation may purchase redresse. I will not urge what connivence hath been noted in as disfavorable cases : it is sufficient for me to pleade mine own acquittall. Other prayse he affecteth not, that in a deepe insight into his innermost partes, findeth not the higheft pitch of his hope equivalent to the lowest pit of your commendation ; and if by a gentle construction, or a favorable encouragement, he seemeth any thing in others opinion, that is nothing in his owne censure, the lesfer his merite, the greater their mercy ; and the barrainer his desert, the frutefuller your liberality ; whose unmeasurable prayses I am to interpret, not as they may seeme in some bounteous conceit, but as they are in mine owne knowledge ; good wordes, but unfitly applied ; frendly benevolences, but

waistfully bestowed ; gallant amplifications, but slenderly deserved : what but termes of civility, or favours of curtesie, or hyperboles of loove, whose franke allowance I shall not be able to earne with the study of twenty yeares more : in briefe, nothing but partiall witnesse, prejudicate judgements, idle preambles, and in effect meere wordes. And even so as I found them, I leave them. Yet let me not dismiss so extensive curtesie with an empty hand. Whatsoever I am (that am the least little of my thoughtes, and the greatest contempt of mine owne heart) *Parthenophill* and *Parthenophe* embellished, the *Spanish Counsellour* inglished, and *Shore's Wife* eternized, shall everlastingly testifie what you are : go forward in maturity, as ye have begun in pregnancy, and behold *Parthenopocus*, the sonne of the brave Meleager, Homer himselfe ; and of the swift Atalanta Calliope herself : be thou, Barnabe, the gallant poet, like Spencer ; or the valiant souldiour, like Baskerville, and ever remember thy *French service* under the brave Earl of Effex. Be thou, John, the many-tongued linguist, like Andrewes, or the curious intelligencer, like Bodley ; and never forget thy *Netherlandish traine* under him that taught the Prince of Navarre, now the valorous King of Fraunce. Be thou, Antony, the flowing oratour, like Doove, or the skilfull heralde, like Clarentius ; and ever remember thy *Portugall voyage* under Don Antonio. The beginning of vertuous proceedings is the one halfe of honourable actions. Be yourselves in hope, and what yourselves desire in effect, and I have attained some portion of my request. For you cannot wish so exceeding-well unto me, but I am as ready with tongue and minde to wish a great-deale better unto you, and to reacquite you with a

large usury of most-affectionate prayers, recommending you to the divine gifts and gracious blessings of heaven.

May it please the favorable reader to voutsafe me the curtesie of his patience, untill he hath thoroughly perused the whole discourse at his howers of leysure (for such scriblings are hardly worth the vacanteſt hours) I am not to importune him any farther, but would be glad he might finde the whole lesse tedious in the end, then some parts in the beginning or midſt; or, at least, that one peece might helpe to furnish-out amendes for another. And so taking my leave with the kindest farewell of a most thankfull minde, I desist from wearying him with a tedious preface, whom I am likely to tire with so many superfluous discourses. Howbeit, might it happely please the sweetest interceſſour to enſweeten the bitterest gall of spite, and to encalme the roughest tempest of rage, I could cordially wiſh that *Nashes S. Fame* might be the period of my invectives; and the *excellent Gentlewoman* my patronesse, or rather championesse in this quarrel, is meeter by nature, and fitter by nurture, to be an enchaunting angell, with her white quill, then a tormenting fury with her blacke inke. It remaineth at the election of one whom God indue with more discretion.

At London: this 16 of July, 1593. The inviolable friend of his entire frendes, Gabriell Harvey.

C

Her owne Prologue, or Demurr.

O MUSES, may a wooman poore and blinde,
 A lyon-draggon, or a bull-beare binde ?
 Is't possible for puling wench to tame
The furibundall Champion of Fame ?
 He brandisheth the whurlewinde in his mouth,
 And thunderbolteth fo-confounding shott :
 Where such a Bombard-goblin, north or south,
 With drad pen-powder, and the conquerous pott ?
 Silly it is that I can sing or say,
 And shall I venture such a blustrous fray ?
 Hazard not, panting quill, thy aspen selfe :
 He'll murther thy conceit, and braine thy braine.
 Spare me, ô super-domineering elfe !
 And most railipotent for ever raine.

Si tibi vis ipsi parcere, parce mihi.

Her Counter Sonnet, or Correction of her owne Preamble.

SCORNE frump the meacock verfe that dares not sing,
 Drouping, so like a flagging flower in raine :
 Where doth the Urany or Fury ring,
 That shall enfraight my stomacke with disdaine ?
 Shall frend put up such braggardous affrontes ?
 Are milkfop Muses such whiteliver'd trontes ?
 Shall boy the gibbet be of writers all,
 And none hang-up the gibbet on the wall ?
 If dreery hobbling ryme hart-broken be,

And quake for dread of Danter's scarecrow presse,
Shrew prose, thy pluckcrow implements addresse,
And pay the hangman pen his double fee.
Be Spite a Sprite, a Termagant, a bugg:
Truth feares no ruth, and can the great Div'll tugge.

—— *Ultrix accincta flagello.*

Her old Comedy, newly entituled.

MY prose is resolute as Bevis sworde:
March, rampant beast, in formidable hide:
Supererogation Squire on cockhorse ride:
Zeale shapes an aunswer to the blouddiest worde.
If nothing can *the booted souldiour* tame,
Nor ryme, nor prose, nor honesty, nor shame,
But *Swash* will still his trompery advaunce,
I'll leade the *gagtooth'd fop* a new-founde daunce.
Deare howers were ever cheap to pidling me.
I knew a glorious and braving knight,
That would be deem'd a truculentall wight:
Of him I scrawl'd a dowty comedy.
Sir Bombarduccio was his cruell name;
But *Gnasharduccio* the sole brute of Fame.

L'Envoy.

SEE, how he brayes and fumes at me, poore lasse,
That must immortalife the killcow *Affe*.

*To right worshipfull his especiall dear frend, M. Gabriell
Harvey, Doctour of Law.*

SWEET M. Doctour Harvey, (for I cannot entitle you with an epithite of les value then that which the Grecian and Roman oratours ascribed to Theophrastus, in respect of so many your excellent labours, garnished with the garland of matchlesse oratory) if at any time either the most earnest persuation of a deare frend, and unusually most deare and constant, adjured thereunto by the singular vertue of your most prayse-worthy and unmatched wit; or the wondrous admiration of your peerlesse conceit, embraced with so many gorgeous ornamentes of divine rhetorique; or the doubtlesse successive benefit thereof, devoted to the glory of our English eloquence, and our vulgar Tuscanisme (if I may so terme it) may worke any plausible or respective motions with you to beautifie and enrich our age with those most praise-mooving workes, full of gallantest discourse and reason, which I understand by some assured intelligence be now glowing upon the anvile, ready to receive the right artificiall forme of divinest workmanship; then let, I beseech you, nay, by all our mutual friendships I conjure you (love and admiration of them arming me with the placarde of farther confidence) those, and other your incomparable writings, speedily, or rather presently, shew themselves in the shining light of the sunne: that, by this publication of so rare and rich discourses, our English ravens, the spitefull enemyes to all birdes of more bewtiful wing, and more harmonious note then themselves,

may shrowde themselves in their nests of basest obscurity, and keepe hospitality with battes and owles, fit consorts for such vile carions. Good sir, arise, and confound those viperous cryticall monsters, and those prophane atheistes of our Commonwealth, which endeavour with their mutinous and serpentine hissing, like geese, not to arme the senatours and oratours of Rome, but to daunt, astonish, and, if it were possible, to overthrow them. And sithence the very thunder-lightning of your admirable eloquence is sufficiently available to strike them with a lame palsie of tongue (if they be not already smitten with a iencelesse apoplexy in head, which may easely ensue such contagious catharres and reumes, as I am privy some of them have been grievously diseased withall), misse not, but hitt them fuerly home, as they deserve with Supererogation. You have bene reputed evermore, since first I heard of you in Oxford and elsewhere, to have bene as much given to favour, commend, and frequent such as were approoved, or toward in learning, witt, kinde behaviour, or any good quality, as may be required in any man of your demerit: an undoubted sign how much you loath invectives or any nedeles contentions. I would (as many your affectionate friends would) it had bene your fortune to have encountred some other Paranymphe, then such as you are now to discipline: most unwillingly, I perceive, but most necessarily, and not without especiall consideration, being so manifestly urged, and grosely provoked to defend yourselfe. But you have ere now bene acquainted with patience perforce; and I hope the most desperate swasher of them will one day learne to shew himself honeste or wiser. And thus recommending your sweet endeavours, with your graver studies, to the

highest treasury of heavenly Muses, I right heartely take my leave with a Sonnet of that Muse that honoreth the Urany of du Bartas, and yourselfe : of Du Bartas elsewhere ; here of him whose excellent pages of the French king, the Scottissh king, the brave Monsieur de la Nöe, the aforesayd Lord du Bartas, Sir Philip Sidney, and fundry other worthy perfonages, deserve immortall commendation. I thanke him very hartely that imparted unto me those fewe sheetes ; and if all be like them, truly all is passing notable, and right singular.

SONNET.

Those learned oratours, Roomes auncient fages,
 Persuasions pith, directours of affection,
 The mindes chief counsaile, rhetoriques perfection,
 The pleasaunt baulms of peace, warres fierce outrages :
 Sweet Grecian prophets, whose smooth Muse assuages
 The Furies powerfull wrath, poisons infection :
 Philosophers (by causes due connexion,
 Match't with th'effects of Nature) future ages
 Embraving with rich documents of Art :
 The wisest statemen of calme commonweales :
 The learned generall counsels, which impart
 Divineſt laws, whose wholesome physique heales
 Both church and layety : all in one beholde
 Ennobled arts, as precious stones in gold.

From my lodging in Holborne, this of June, 1593, your
 most affectionate,

BARNABE BARNES.

Having perused my former sonet, if it may please you, sir, to do asmuch for your deare frends *Parthenophill* and *Parthenophe*, they shall have the desired fruite of their short exercise, and will rest beholding to your curteous acceptance; which they would be glad to reacquite in the loovingest manner they may. And so most affectionatly recommend themselves unto your good self, whose unblemished fame they will evermore maintaine with the best bloud of their hartes, tongues, and pennes. We will not say how much we long to see the whole prayses of your two notorious enemies, the Asse and the Foxe.

SONET.

Nast, or the confuting Gentleman.

The Muses scorne; the courtiers laughing-stock;
The countreys coxecombe; printers proper new;
The cities leprofy; the pandars stew;
Virtues disdayne; Honesties aduerse rock;
Envies vile champion; Slaunders stumblingblock.
Graund oratour of *cunny-catchers* crew;
Base broaching tapster of reports untrue;
Our moderne viper, and our countryes mock;
True valor's cancer-worme, sweet learnings rust.
Where shall I finde meete colours and fit wordes
For such a counterfaict and worthlesse matter?
Him whom thou rayledest on at thine owne lust,
Sith *Bodine* and sweet *Sidney* did not flatter,
His invective thee too much grace affordes.

PARTHENOPHIL.

SONNET.

Harvey, or the Sweet Doſtour.

SIDNEY, ſweet cignet, pride of Thameſis ;
 Apollos laurell ; Mars his proud prowefſe ;
 BODINE, regiſter of realmes happineſſe,
 Which Italyes and Fraunces wonder is :
 HATCHER, with ſilence whom I may not miſs :
 Nor LEWEN, rhetoriques richeſt nobleſſe :
 Nor WILSON, whoſe diſcretion did redreſſe
 Our Engliſh barbariſme ; adjoyne to this
 Divineſt morall SPENCER : let theſe ſpeake
 By their ſweet letters, which do beſt unfould
 HARVEY'S deſerved praiſe, ſince my Muſe weake
 Cannot relate ſomuch as hath bene tould.
 By theſe forenam'd : then, vaine it were to bring
 New feather to his Fames ſwift-feathered wing.

PARTHENOPHE.

The Printers Advertiffement to the Gentleman Reader.

CURTEOUS Gentlemen, it seemed good to M. Doctour Harvey, for brevity-sake, and because he liked not over-long preambles, or postambles, to short discourses, to omit the commendatorie Letters and Sonnets of M. Thorius, M. Chewt, and divers other his affectionate frendes of London and both the Universities, which, neverthelesse, are reserved to be prefixed, inserted, or annexed, either in his *defensive Letters*, enlarged with certaine new epistles of more speciall note, or in his *Discourses of Nashes S. Fame*, already finished, and presently to be published, as these shall like their entertainment; of whose favorable and plausible welcome divers learned and fine wittes have presumed the best. Howbeit, finally it was thought not amisse, upon conference with some his advised acquaintance, to make choice of some two or three of the reasonablest and temperatest Sonnets (but for variety, and to avoid tediousnesse in the entrance, rather to be annexed in the end, then prefixed in the beginning of the present Discourse) one of the foresayd M. Thorius, an other of M. Chewt, and the third of a learned French gentleman, Monsieur Fregeuill Gautius, who hath published some weighty treatises, aswell politique as religious, both in Latin and French, and hath acquainted M. Doctour Harvey with certaine most profitable mathematicall devises of his own invention. The residue is not added by me, but annexed by the autor himselfe, whom I humbly recomende to your curteous censure, and so rest from overtroubling you with my unpolished lines.

D

Pierces Supererogation :

OR

A NEW PRAYSE OF
THE OLD ASSE.

*A Preparative to certaine larger Discourses,
intituled*

NASHES S. FAME.

Gabriell Harvey.



L O N D O N

Imprinted by Iohn Wolfe,

1593.

INTRODUCTION.

THE length of this tract has rendered it necessary for us to divide it into Parts; and it will be found on reading it that the author, Gabriel Harvey, has gone at large, and with much learning and more self-conceit, into the discussion of many matters besides his dispute with Thomas Nash. There is hardly any question in religion, politics, history, philosophy, literature, or criticism, upon which the Orator has not offered, and indeed thrust forward, his opinions: in doing so, we must acknowledge that he often gives information, new in itself and interesting in its topics, and this circumstance renders the production before us much more readable than it might otherwise be considered. Harvey's style is often turgid, bombastic, redundant, and so full of reduplications and pleonasms as to make it quite clear that he was on excellent terms with himself, and fancied that the pleasure he took in the writing would certainly be participated in the reading.

The date at the close of "Pierce's Supercerogation" is 27 April 1593, so that it ought to be perused before the same writer's "New Letter of Notable Contents", which bears the date of 16 September in the same year. As stated on a previous occasion,

a

the last of our series of these contentious pamphlets will be accompanied by a statement of the precise sequence in which, we think, they ought to be bound, and it may or may not be preferred to the order in which we have reprinted them—a process regulated mainly by the difficulty or facility with which we were able to obtain transcripts. We ought to have stated, in reference to the “New Letter of Notable Contents”, that we were indebted for the use of the original edition to the kindness of Frederic Ouvry, Esq., Treasurer of the Society of Antiquaries. We are always glad to acknowledge obligations of this kind; but our opportunities of doing so are more rare than we could wish.

J. P. C.

Pierces Supererogation :

OR

A NEW PRAYSE OF THE OLD ASSE.

A Preparative to certaine larger Discourses, intituled

NASHES S. FAME.

— o —

I was ever unwilling to undertake any enterprife that was unmeete for me; or to play any part, either in earnest or in jest, that might ill-befeeme me: and never more unwilling then at this instant, when I must needs do it, or put something in hazard that I would be loth to commit to the curtesie of adventure. Not because my confuters swordes or my enemies daggers carry any credit with the wise; or because my letters feare any discredite with the honest; or because I cannot abide to be confuted, that dayly confute my self and condemne every mine owne default with rigour; but because silence may seeme suspicious to many, patience contemptible to some, a good minde a bad hart to those that value all by courage, a knowne forbearer of libellers, a continuall bearer of coales: and there is no end of abuses upon abuses, of injuries upon injuries, of contempt upon contempt, where presumptuous impudency and odious slander, the two errantest vagabonds in the world, may faconduct themselves and franckely passe uncontrolled. Yet were that either all, or the worst of all, I could still vow silence

in brawles, and would still professe patience in wronges (I hate brawles with my hart, and can turne over a volume of wronges with a wett finger); but some cunning men, that carry hooney in their mouthes and gall in their hartes, not so sweete in the premisses as bitter in the conclusion, can smoothly and finely descant upon the least advantage, howsoever injurious; and certaine pretty experiences, by way of sensible instruction, have taught some that malice was never such an hypocrite as now, and the world never such a Scoggin as now, and the divell never such a knave as now: and what a desperate diffoluteness were it in him that regardeth his good name to abandon himselfe, or to relinquish the deereſt thing in this life (I know no deerer thing then honest credite) to the favour of envy or to the discretion of fortune? Gentlemen, he is hardly bestead for a patrone that relyeth on the tuition of envy, or reposeth his affiance in the protection of fortune; and he must not take it unkindely to bee forsaken of other by the way that forsaketh himselfe in the way. Even he that loveth not to be his owne defender, much lesse his owne prayser (do him no wrong, my masters, though ye doe him no right), yet hateth to be his owne traytor, and hath reason to experimenter some rounde conclusions before hee offer his throte to the blade of villany, or his forehead to the brand of diffamation. And, although he be the subject of his own contempt and the argument of his owne satyres (surely no man lesse doteth upon himselfe, or more severely censurcth his own imperfections), yet he in some respects disdayneth to be reviled by the abjects of the world, whose dispraise in some age were a commendation and whose praise an invective: but this is a queint world, and needeth no Aprill showers

to furnish May games. I protest I have, these many yeeres, not in pride but in judgement, scorned to appeere in the rancke of this scribling generation; and could not have bene hired with a great fee to publish any pamphlet of whatsoever nature in mine owne name, had I not bene intollerably provoked, first by one rakehell and now by another, the two impudentest mates that ever haunted the presse (some have called them knaves in grose, I have found them fooles in retayle); but when it came to this desperate point, that I must needs either bee a base writer, or a vile asse in printe, the lesse of the two evils was to be chosen, and I compelled rather to alter my resolution for a time then to prejudice my self for ever. They that list may feede at the manger with the sonnes of the mule: it is an other table, philosophy that I fanisie. Howbeit, amongst all the misfortunes that ever happened unto me, I account it my greatest affliction, that I am constrained to busie my penne without ground or substance of discourse meete for an active and industrious world. Every man hath his crosses in one accident or other; but I know not a greivouffer persecution then a base employment of precious time necessarily enforced. Other crosses may someway edifie: this is a plague without remedy, a torment without end, a hell without redemption. As in the course of my study it was allwayes my reckoning, he looseth nothing, whatsoever he looseth, that gaineth time; so in the taske of my writing or other exercise, it is my account, he gayneth nothing, whatsoever he gayneth, that looseth time. A good matter, delivered in good manner, winneth some estimation with good mindes, but no manner sufficient to countenance a contemptible theame: and a rascall subject abaseth any forme, or what

hath drowned the memory of the trimmest and daintiest trifles, that fine conceit hath devised? Were it mine owne election, I might worthily incurre many reproofes, and justly impute them to my simple choyce; but necessity hath as little free-will as law, and compelleth, like a tyrant, where it cannot perswade, like an oratour, or advise like a counsellour. Any virtue, an honourable commonplace, and a flourishing braunch of an heavenly tree: politique and militar affaires, the worthiest matters of consultation, and the two herculean pillars of noble states, the private lives of excellent personages in sondry courses, and the publike actions of puissant nations in sondry governementes, shining mirrours of notable use for the present time and future ages. Were it at my appointment to dispose freely of mine owne howers, O, how willingly and cheerefully could I spend the freshest and deereft part of my life in such argumentes of valour! Learninge is a goodly and gallant creature in many partes, and divers members of that beautifull body upbraide the most exquisite penne and most curious pencill of insufficiency; no diligence too-much, where no labour enough: the fruitefullest sciences require painefullest industry, and some lively principles would be touched to the quicke: whatsoever booke-case or fchole-point is found by experience to be essential and practicable in the world, deserveth to be discussed with sharpe invention and found judgement. I could yet take pleasure and profite in canvassing some problems of naturall philosophy, of the mathematiques, of geography, and hydrography, of other commodious experimentes, fit to advaunce many valorous actions; and I would, upon mine owne charges, travaile into any parte of Europe to heare some pregnant paradoxes

and certaine singular questions in the highest professions of learning, in physick, in law, in divinity, effectually and thoroughly disputed *pro* and *contra*, and would thinke my travaile as advauntageously bestowed to some purposes of importance, as they that have adventurously discovered new-found landes, or bravely surprized Indies. What conferences or disputations, what parliaments or councils, like those that deliberate upon the best government of commonwealthes, and the best discipline of churches; the dubble anchor of the mighty shipp, and the two great luminaries of the world? Other extravagant discourses, not materiall or quarrelous contentions, not availeable, are but waisting of winde or blotting of paper. What, should exercise or studdy burne the sunne or the candle in vaine? or, what should I doe against my selfe in speakinge for my selfe, if outward respectes did not inwardly gripe and a present exigence lay violent hands upon me? Though extremity be powerable, yet an unwilling will is excusable. Philosophers and lawyers can best argue the case of involuntary acts, but what so forcible as compulsion, or so pardonable as a passive action? Blame him not, or blame him gently, that would be a little loth to be dieted at the racke of the old Ass, or to be bitten of the young dog. He is no party in the cause, that pleadeth thus against *Aristogiton*. Sweet gentlemen, imagine it to be a speech addressed unto your selves: *Peradventure the viper did never bite any of you, and the Gods forbid it should ever bite you; but when you espie any such pernicious creature, you presently dispatch it: in like manner, when you behold a sycophant and a man of a viperous nature, looke not till he hath bitten some of you, but so soone as he starteth up pull*

him down. And again, in another place of the same sententious and politique oration: *Hee that mainetayneth a fycophant is by nature and kinde an enemy of the good; unlesse some-body imagine that the seede and root of a naughty fycophant ought to remaine in the citty, as it were, for store or good husbandry.* Demosthenes was as deeply wise as highly eloquent, and hath many such notable sentences, as it were, caveats or provisoes against the dangerous enemies of that flourishing citty, and especially against calumniatours, whose viperous sting hee could by no meanes avoide; albeit, otherwise such an oratour as could allure heartes with perswasion, or conjure mindes with astonishment. I would no other citty loved figges; or must an other citty of necessity love figges, because it is growne an other Athens, a mother of eloquence, a nurse of learning, a grandame of valour, a seat of honor, and, as Aristotle termed Athens, a garden of Alcinous, wherein one fruite ripeneth upon an other, one peare uppon an other, one grape upon an other, and one figge uppon an other. The fycophant be his owne interpreter; and if he may be licensed or permitted to bee his owne carver too, much good may it doe him, and sweete digestion give him joy of his dainety figg. I must have a little care of one that canot easily brucke unreasonable sawcinesse, and would be loth to see the garden of Alcinous made the garden of Greene, or motley. It was wont to be said by way of a proverbe, he that will be made a sheepe shall find wolves enough; but, forsooth, this exceeding-wise world is a great Asse-maker; and he that will suffer himselfe to be proclaimed an Asse in printe shall bee sure never to want loades, and loades enough. Who so ready to call her neighbour a skold, as the rankest skold of

the parish ; or who so forward to accuse, to debase, to revile, to crow-treade an other as the arranteft fellow in a country ? Let his owne mouth be his pasport, or his owne penne his warrant, and who so leawd as his greateft aduersary, modesty ; or so honest as his deereft frend, villany ; or so learned as his learndest counsell, vanity ; or so wise as his profoundest autor, young Apuleius ? What familiar spirite of the ayre, or fire, like the glibb and nimble witt of young Apuleius ? or where is the eloquence that should describe the particular perfections of young Apuleius ? Prudence may borrow discretion, logique arguments, rhetorique coulours, phantasy conceites, steale an edge, and gold a luster, of young Apuleius. O, the rare and queint invention ! ô, the gallant and gorgeous elocution ! ô, the brave and admirable amplifications ! ô, the artificiall and fine extenuations ! ô, the lively pourtraictures of egregious prayses and disprayses ! ô, the cunning and straunge mingle-mangles ! ô, the pithy jestes and marvelous girdes of young Apuleius, the very prodigality of art and nature ! What greater impossibility then to decipher the high and mighty stile of young Apuleius, without a liberall portion of the same elevate spirite ? Happy the old father that begat, and thrise happy the sweete muses that suckled and fostered young Apuleius ! Till admiration hath found-out a smother and trickier quill for the purpose, desire must be content to leave the supple and tidy constitution of his omni-sufficient witt undisplayed. Onely it becommeth gentle mindes to yeeld themselves thanckefull, and to tender their bounden duety to that inestimable pearle of eloquence for this precious glimze of his incomprehensible valour : one shorte maxime, but more worth then all the axioms of Aristotle ; or the

idees of Plato ; or the aphorismes of Hippocrates ; or the paragraphes of Justinian. He knoweth not to manage his penne, that was not born with an asse in his mouth, a foole in his throate, and a knave in his whole body. Simple men may write against other, or pleade for themselves ; but they cannot confute cuttingly, like a hackster of Queen-Hith, or bellow lustely, like the foreman of the heard. I goe not about to discover an asse in an oxes hide : he needeth no other to pull him by the famous eares, that is so hasty to descry and so busy to bestirre his wisest partes ; but what a notable asse indeede was I, that sought the winges of a mounting Pegasus, or a flying Phenix, where I found the head and feet of a braying creature. Some promises are desperate debtes, and many threatninges empty cloudes ; or rather armies fighting in the ayre, terrible visions. Simplicity cannot dubble, and plaine dealing will not dissemble. I looked either for a fine-witted man, as quicke as quicksilver, that, with a nimble dexterity of lively conceite and exquisite secretaryship, would out-runne mee many hundred miles in the course of his dainty deuises ; a delicate minion, or some terrible bombardier of tearmes, as wild as wildfire, that, at the first flash of his fury, would leave me thunder-stricken upon the ground, or, at the last volley of his outrage, would batter me to dust and ashes. A redoubted adversary ! But the trimme silke-worme I looked for (as it were in a proper contempt of common finenesse) prooveth but a silly glow-worme, and the dreadfull engineer of phrases, in steede of thunderboltes, shooteth nothing but dogboltes and catboltes, and the homeliest boltes of rude folly : such arrant confuting stuffe, as never print saw compiled together, till maister Villany became an autor, and Sir Nafh

a gentleman. Printers, take hede how ye play the heralds. Some lusty gentlemen of the maker can no sooner bare a goofe-quill or a woodcockes feather in their shield, but they are like the renowned Lobbelinus when hee had gotten a new coate, and take upon them, without pittie or mercy, like the onely lordes of the field. If ever esquier raved with conceit of his new armes, it is DanTERS gentleman, that mightily despiseth whatsoever hee beholdeth from the high turret of his creast, and cranckly spitteth uppon the heads of some that were not greatly acquaynted with such familiar entertainment. His best frende be his judge; and I appeale to my worst ennemy, whether he ever read a more pestilent example of prostituted impudency? Were hee not a kinfeman of the foresayd viper, a dog in malice, a calfe in witt, an oxe in learning, and an asse in discretion (time shall cronicle him as he is) was it possible that any man should have bestowed some broad and loud tearmes as he hath done? Who could abide it without actual revenge, but hee that enterteineth spite with a smile, maketh a pastime of Straunge Newes, turneth choler into fanguine, vinegar into wine, vexation into sport, and hath a salve for a greater sore?

Come, young sophisters, you that affecte raylinge in your disputations, and with a clamorous howte would fet the philosophy schooles *non plus*: come, olde cutters, you that use to make dowty frayes in the streetes, and would hack-it terribly: come, hee-and-shee-scoldes, you that love to pleade-it-out invincibly at the barre of the dunghill, and will rather loose your lives, then the last word: come, busy commotioners, you that carry a world of quarrelous wits and mutinous tounes in your heads: come, most-redowted

Momus, you that will sternely keepe heaven and earth in awe: come, running heads and giddy pennes of all humours, you that daunce attendance upon oddest fashions, and learne a perfect methode, to passe other, and to excell your selves, such a new-devised modell as never saw fun before, and may make the gayest mold of antiquity to blush. Old Archilochus and Theon were but botchers in their rayling faculty; Stefichorus, but a grose bungler; Aristarchus, but a curious and nice foole; Aristophanes and Lucian, but merry jesters; Ibis against Ovid; Mevius against Horace; Carbilius Pictor against Virgill; Lavinius against Terence; Cratena against Euripedes; Zoilus against Homer, but rancke fowters. Salust did but dally with Tully; Demades but toy with Demosthenes; Pericles but sporte with Thucydides, and so forth. For examples are infinite; and no exercise more auncient then iambiques amongst poetes; invectives amongst oratours; confutations amongst philosophers; satyres amongst carpers; libels amongst factioners; pasquils amongst malcontentes; and quarrels amongst all. But the olde age was an infante in witt, and a grammer scholler in arte; Lucians Retor, never so bravely furnished, will be heard with an eccho: Julian will rattle Christendome; Arrius will shake the church; Macchiavell will yerke the commonwealth; Unico Aretino will scourge princes; and here is a lusty ladd of the castell that will bind beares and ride golden asses to death. Were the pith of courage lost, it might be founde in his penne; or were the marrow of conceite to seeke, where should witt looke for witt but in his incke-bottle? Arte was a dunse till hee was a writer; and the quickest confuter a drowfy dreamer, till he put a life into the dead

quill, and a flye into the wooden boxe of forlorne Pandora. A pointe for the fatyrift, whose conceite is not a ruffian in folio; and a figg for the confuter, that is not a fwashbucler with his pen! Old whimwhams have plodded on long enough; fresh invention from the tapp must have his friskes and careers an other while; and what comparable to this spowte of yarking eloquence? Give me the fellow that is as Peereleffe as Pennyleffe; and can oppose all the libraries in Poules Churchyard with one wonderfull work of Supererogation; such an unmatcheable peece of Learning, as no bookes can countervaille, but his owne; the onely recordes of the singularities of this age. Did I speake at a venture, I might deceive, and be deceived; but where experience is a witnesse, and judgement the judge, I hope the errour will not be unreasonably great.

There was a time when I floted in a sea of encountering waves, and devoured many famous confutations with an eager and insatiable appetite; especially Aristotle against Plato and the old philosophers, divers excellent Platonistes, indued with rare and divine wittes, (of whome elsewhere at large) Justinus Martyr, Philoponus, Valla, Vives, Ramus against Aristotle: oh! but the great maister of the schooles and high chauncellour of univerties could not want pregnant defence: Perionius, Gallandius, Carpentarius, Scegius, Lieblerus against Ramus. What! hath the royall professoour of eloquence and philosophy no favourites? Talæus, Ossatus, Freigius, Minos, Rodingus, Scribonius, for Ramus against them; and so forth, in that hott contradictory course of logique and philosophy. But alas! silly men, simple Aristotle, more simple Ramus, most simple the rest, either ye never knew what a sharpe-edged and cutting con-

futation meant, or the date of your stale oppositions is expired, and a new-found land of confuting commodities discovered by this brave Columbus of tearmes, and this onely marchant venturer of quarrels, that detecteth new Indies of invention, and hath the winds of Æolus at commaundement. Happy, you flourishinge youthes that follow his incomparable learned steps; and unhappy, we old dunces that wanted such a worthy president of all nimble and lively dexterities! What, should I appeale infinite other to their perpetuall shame, or summon such and such to their foule disgrace? Erasmus in Latine, and Sir Thomas More in English, were supposed fine and pleasant confuters in their time, and were accordingly embraced of the forwardest and trimmest wittes: but alacke, how unlike this dainty minion! Agrippa was reputed a gyant in confutation; a demi-god in omnifufficiency of knowledge; a divell in the practife of horrible artes: oh! but Agrippa was an urcheon, Copernicus a shrimpe, Cardan a puppy, Scaliger a baby, Paracelsus a scab, Eraftus a patch, Sigonius a toy, Cujacius a bable to this termagant, that fighteth not with simple wordes, but with dubble swordes; not with the trickling water of Helicon, but with piercing aqua fortis; not with the sorry powder of experience, but with terrible gunpowder; not with the small shott of contention, but with the maine ordinaunce of fury. For brevity I overkip many notable men, and valorous confuters in their severall vaines, had not affection otherwhiles swinged their reason, where reason should have swayed their affection. But partiality was ever the busiest actour; and passion, the whottest confuter, whatsoever plausible cause otherwise pretended; and hee is rather to bee esteemed an angell then a man,

or a man of heaven, not of earth, that tendereth integrity in his hart, equity in his tounge, and reason in his penne. Fleſh and blood are fraile creatures and partiall diſcourſers ; but he approacheth neereſt unto God, and yeeldeth ſweeteſt fruit of a divine diſpoſition, that is not tranſported with wrath, or any blinde paſſion, but guided with cleere and pure reaſon, the ſoveraigne principle of ſound proceeding. It is not the affirmative or negative of the writer, but the trueth of the matter written, that carryeth meat in the mouth and victory in the hande. There is nothing ſo exceeding fooliſh but hath bene defended by ſome wiſe man ; nor any thing ſo paſſing wiſe but hath bene confuted by ſome foole. Mans will no ſafe rule, as Ariſtotle ſayth : good Homer ſometime ſleepeth ; S. Auguſtine was not aſhamed of his retractations ; S. Barnard ſaw not all thinges ; and the beſt chart may eſtſoones overthrow. He that taketh a confutation in hand muſt bringe the ſtandard of judgement with him, and make wiſedome the moderatour of wit. But I might aſwell have overpaſſed the censure as the perſons ; and I have to do with a party that valueth both alike, and can phanſy no autor but his owne phanſy. It is neyther reaſon, nor rime, nor witt, nor arte, nor any imitation that he regardeth ; hee hath builded towers of Supererogation in his owne head, and they muſt ſtand whoſoever fall. Howbeit, I cannot overſlipp ſome without manifeſt injury, that deſerve to have their names enrolled in the firſt rancke of valiant confuters : worthy men, but ſubject to imperfections, to errour, to mutuall reprove ; ſome more, ſome leſſe, as the manner is. Harding and Jewell were our Eſchines and Demofthenes ; and ſcarſely any language in the Chriſtian world hath afforded a payre

of aduerfaries equivalent to Harding and Jewell : two thundring and lightning oratours in divinity ; but now, at last, infinitely overmatched by this hideous thunderbolt in humanity, that hath the onely right tearmes invective, and triumpheth over all the spirites of contradiction. You that have read Luther againft the Pope; Sadolet, Longolius, Omphalius, Oforius, againft Luther; Calvin againft Sadolet, Melanchthon againft Longolius, Sturmius againft Omphalius, Haddon againft Oforius, Baldwin againft Calvin, Beza againfte Baldwin, Eraftus againft Beza, Travers againft Eraftus, Sutcliff againft Travers, and so forth (for there is no ende of endleffe controversies; nor Bellarmine fhall ever fatisfye the Proteftantes; nor Whittaker contente the Papiftes; nor Bancroft appeafe the Precifians; nor any reason pacify affection; nor any authority refolve obftinacy). You that have moft diligently read thefe, and thefe, and fundry other, reputed excellent in their kindes, caft them all away, and read him alone, that can fchoole them all in their tearmes invective, and teacheth a new-found arte of confuting, his all-onely arte. Martin himfelfe but a mea-cocke, and Papp-hatchet himfelfe but a milkefop to him : that inditeth with a penne of fury and the incke of vengeance, and hath cart-loades of paper-shot, and chainshot at commaundement. Tush ! no man can blaſon his armes but himfelfe. Behold the mighty champion, the dubble ſword-bearer, the redowtable fighter with both handes, that hath robbed William Conquerour of his ſurname, and in the very firft page of his Strange Newes choppeth-off the head of Foure Letters at a blow ! Hee it is that hath it rightly in him indeede, and can roundly doe the ſcate, with a witneſſe. Why, man, he is

worth a thousand of these piddling and dribbling confuters, that sitt all day buzzing upon a blunt point or two, and with much adoe drifle out as many sentences in a weeke as he will powre-downe in an howre. It is not long since the goodlyest graces of the most-noble commonwealthes upon earth, eloquence in speech, and civility in manners, arrived in these remote parts of the world : it was a happy revolution of the heavens, and worthy to be chronicled in an English Livy, when Tiberis flowed into the Thames, Athens removed to London, pure Italy and fine Greece planted themselves in rich England : Apollo, with his delicate troupe of Muses, forsooke his old mountaines and rivers, and frequented a new Parnassus, and an other Helicon, nothinge inferiour to the olde when they were most-solemnly haunted of divine wittes, that taught rhetorique to speake with applause, and poetry to sing with admiration. But even since that flourishing transplantation of the daintiest and sweetest lerning that humanity ever tasted, arte did but springe in such as Sir John Checke and M. Ascham ; and witt budd in such as Sir Phillip Sidney and M. Spencer ; which were but the violetes of March, or the primeroses of May, till the one begane to sprowte in M. Robart Greene, as in a sweating impe of the ever-greene Laureli ; the other to blossome in M. Pierce Pennileffe, as in the riche garden of pore Adonis ; both to growe to perfection in M. Thomas Nashe, whose prime is a harvest, whose arte a misterie, whose witt a miracle, whose stile the onely life of the presse, and the very hart-blood of the grape. There was a kind of smooth, and clenly, and neate, and fine elegancy before (proper men, handsome giftes) ; but alacke ! nothinge livelie and mightie, like the brave *vino de monte*, till his frisking

pennce began to playe the Sprite of the Buttry, and to teach his mother-tongue such lusty gambolds as may make the gallantest French, Italian, or Spanishe gagliards to blushe for extreame shame of their ideot simplicitie. The difference of wittes is exceeding straung and almost incredible. Good Lord! how may one man passe a thousand, and a thousand not compare with one? Arte may give out precepts and directories in *communi forma*, but it is super-excellent witt that is the mother pearle of precious invention, and the goulden mine of gorgeous elocution. Na, it is a certaine pregnant and lively thing without name, but a quaint mistery of mounting conceit, as it were a knacke of dexterity, or the nippitaty of the nappiest grape, that infinitely surpasseth all the invention and elocution in the world; and will bunge Demosthenes owne mouth with new-fangled figures of the right stampe, maugre all the thundering and lightninge periodes of his eloquentest orations, forlorne creatures! I have had some prettie triall of the finest Tuscanisme in graine; and have curiously observed the cunningest experiments and bravest complements of aspiring emulation, but must geeve the bell of singularity to the humorous witt, and the garland of victory to the *dominiering eloquence*. I come not yet to the Praise of the Olde Asshe; it is young Apuleius that feedeth upon this glory; and having enclosed these rancke commons to the proper use of himselfe and the capricious flocke, adopteth whom he listeth without exception: as Alexander the Great had a huge intention to have all men his subjects, and all his subjects called Alexanders. It was strange newes for some to be so affected, and a worke of supererogation for him, so bountifully to vouchsafe his golden name, the appropriate

cognifance of his noble ftile. God-night, poore rhetorique of forry bookes ; adieu, good old humanity ; gentle artes and liberall sciences, content your felves ; farewell, my deere moothers, fometime flourishing univerfities : fome that have long continued your fonnes in nature, your apprentifes in arte, your fervauntes in exercife, your lovers in affection, and your vaffalles in duety muft either take their leaves of their sweeteft freendes, or become the flaves of that dominating eloquence that knoweth no art but the cutting arte, nor acknowledgeth any fchoole but the curtifan fchoole. The reft is pure naturall, or wondrous supernaturall. Would it were not an infectious bane, or an incroching pocke ! Let me not bee miftaken by finifter construction that wreafeth and wrigleth every fillable to the worft. I have no reference to my felfe, but to my fuperiours by incomparable degrees. To be a Ciceronian is a flowing ftocke : poore Homer, a wofull wight, may put his finger in a hole, or in his blind eye : the excellenteft histories and woorthieft chronicles (ineftimable monumetes of wifedome and valour) what but ftale antickes ? the flowers and fruites of delicate humanity, that were wont to be dainetily and tenderly conferved, now preferved with duft as it were with fugar, and with hoare as it were with hoony. That frifking wine and that lively knacke in the right capricious veine, the onely booke that holdeth out with a countenance, and will be heard when woorme-toungued oratours, duft-footed poets, and weatherwife hiftorians fhall not bee allowed a woord to caft at a dogg. There is a fatall period of whatfoever wee terme flourishing ; the worlde runneth on wheelles, and there muft be a vent for all thinges. The Ciceronian may fleepe til the

Scogginist hath plaid his part; one sure conny-catcher woorth twenty philosophers; a phantastickall rimester more vendible then the notablest mathematician: no profession to the faculty of rayling; all harsh, or obscure, that tickleth not idle phantasies with wanton dalliance or ruffianly jestes: Robin Good-fellow, the meetest autor for Robin Hoodes library: the lesse of Cambridge or Oxforde, the fitter to compile woorkes of Supererogation; and wee that were simply trayned after the Athenian and Roman guise, must bee contente to make roome for roisters that knowe their place, and will take it. Titles and tearmes are but woordes of course: the right fellow, that beareth a braine, can knocke twenty titles on the head at a stroke; and with a jugling shift of that same invincible knacke defende himselfe manfully at the paper-barre. Though I be not greatly employed, yet my leisure will scarcely serve to moralize fables of beares, apes, and foxes (some men can give a shrewd gesse at a courtly allegory), but where lordes in expresse tearmes are magnifically contemned, doctours in the same stile may be courageously confuted. Liberty of tounge and pen is no bondman: nippitaty will not be tied to a post: there is a cap of maintenaunce, called impudency; and what say to him, that in a superabundaunce of that same odd capricious humour findeth *no such want in England, as of an Aretine, that might stripp these golden Affes out of their gay trappings, and after he had ridden them to death with rayling, leave them on the dunghill for carrion?* A frolicke minde, and a brave spirite to bee employed with his stripping instrument, in supply of that onely want of a divine Aretine, the great rider of golden Affes. Were his penne as supererogatory a workeman as his harte, or his

lines such transcendent as his thoughtes, Lord, what an egregious Aretine should we shortly have! how excessively exceeding Aretine himselfe, that bestowed the furmoutingest amplifications at his pleasure, and was a meere hyperbole incarnate! Time may worke an accomplishment of woonders; and his graund intentions seeme to prognosticate no lesse then the uttermost possibilities of capacity or fury extended: would God, or could the divell, give him that unmeasurable allowance of witt and arte, that he extreemely affecteth and infinitely wanteth, there were no encounter but of admiration and honour. But it may very well seeme me to conceale defectes; and I were best to let him runne out his jolly race, and to attende hys pleasure at all assayes, for feare hee degrade mee, or call mee a letter-monger. Oh, would that were the worst! Gallant gentlemen, did you ever see the blades of two brandished swordes in the handes of a fury? See them now: and lo! how the victorious duellist stretcheth out the armes of his prowesse, to runne uppon those poore letters with a maine carreere. *Aut nunc, aut nunquam*: now the deadly stroke must be stricken; now, now he will surely lay about him, like a lusty throsfer, and beate all to powder that commeth in the mighty swinge of his dubble flayle. But I know not what astonishing terror may bedimm my sight; and peradventure the one of those unlawfull weapons is no sword, but a shaken firebrand in the hand of Alecto. All the worse; and he twice wo-begon, poore soule, that is at once assaulted with fier and iron, the twoo unmercifull instrumentes of Mars enraged. God shield quiet men from the handes of such cruell confuters, whose argumentes are swoordes, whose sentences, murthuring bullets; whose phrafses, crof-

barres; whose tearmes no lesse then serpentine powder; whose very breath, the fier of the match: all exceedingly fearefull, save his footing, which may haply give him the flipp. Hee that standeth uppon a wheele, let him beware he fall not. I have heard of some seate stratagems as fly as the flyest in Frontine or Polyen; and could tell you a pretty tale of a slippery ground that woulde make some bodies eares glow, but hee that revealeth the secrete of his owne advauntage may have scope enough to beshrew himselfe. The Ægyptian Mercury would provide to plant his foote upon a square; and his image in Athens was quadrangular, whatsoever was the figure of his hatt; and although he were sometime a ball of Fortune (who can assure himselfe of Fortune?), yet was he never a wheele of folly, or an eele of Ely. The glibbest tunge must consult with his witt, and the roundest head with his secte, or, peradventure, hee will not greatly thanke his tickle devise. The wheelewright may bee as honest a man as the cutler, the drawer as the cutler, the deviser as the printer, the worst of the six as the autor; but some tooles are false prophets, and some shoppes fuller of sophistry then Aristotles Elenches; and if never any witty deviser did futtelly undermine himselfe, good enough. I can tell you the wheele was an ancient hieroglyphique of the most conning Ægyptians, and figured none of their highest mysteries of triumph or glory. But when, againe, I lift up mine eyes, and behold the glorious picture of that most threatning Slassher, is it possible so courageous a confuter should bee lesse terrible then the Basiliske of Orus Apollo, that with his onely hissing killed the poore snakes, his neighbours? Can any letters live that he will slay? Were not patience, or submission, or any course better then

farther discourse? What fonder busines then to trouble the printe with pamphlets that cannot possibly live whiles the basiliske hisseth death? Was I woont to jest at Eldertons ballatinge, Gascoignes sonnettinge, Greenes pamphletting, Martins libelling, Hollinheads engrosing, somebodies abridging, and whatchicaltes translating, and shall I now become a scribbling creature, with fragmentes of shame, that might long sithence have beene a fresh writer with discourses of applause? The very whole matter, what but a thinge of nothinge? the methode, what but a hotchpott for a gallymasfy? by the one or other, what hope of publike use or private credite? Socrates minde could as lightly digest poison as Mithridates boddy; and how easily have the greatest stomackes of all ages, or rather the valiantest courages of the worlde, concocted the hardest and rankest injuries. Politique Philip, victorious Alexander, invincible Scipio, triumphant Cæsar, happy Augustus, magnificent Titus, and the flower of the noblest mindes that immortality honoureth with a sweete facility, gave many bitter reprehensions the slip, and finely ridd their handes of roughest obloquies. Philosophy professeth more; and the Philosopher of Emperours, or rather the Emperour of Philosophers, Marcus Antonius, when hee deserved best, could with a felicity heare the worst. Cherish an inward contentement in thy selfe, my minde; and outwarde occurrences, whom they will not make, shall not marre. It is as great a prayse to be discommended of the dishonest as to be commended of the vertuous; say, affirme, confirme, approve, justify what you can, the captaine-scolde hath vowed the last word: none so bolde to adventure any thinge as he that hath no good thinge to loose; let him forge, or coyne, who will believe him? Lay open his vanity

or foolery, who knoweth it not ? yet who so eager to defende or offende, with tooth or nayle, by hooke or crooke ? The arte of figges hadd ever a dapper witt, a deft conceite, a slicke forhead, a smugg countenaunce, a stinging tongue, a nippinge hande, a bytinge penne, and a bottomlesse pitt of invention, stoared with never-fayling shifte of counterfeite cranckes ; and my betters by many degrees have bene faine to bee the God-sonnes of young Apuleius. Divers excellent men have prayfed the old asse ; give the young asse leave to praise himselfe, and to practife his minion rhetorique uppon other. There is no dealinge where there is no healinge. To strive with dirt is filthy ; to play with edged tooles, daungerous ; to trie masteries with a desperate adversary, hazardous ; to encounter Demosthenes viper or Apolloes basiliske, deadly. To intende your owne intentions with an inviolable constancy, and to levell continually at your owne determined scope, without respecte of extravagant endes or cumbersome interruptions, the best course of proceeding, and onely firme, cheerefull, gallant, and happy resolution. Every by-way that strayeth or gaddeth from that direct path a wandring error, and a perillous or threatninge by-way a forrest of wilde beastes. Hande, touch not the ranckeling byle, and throw away the launcing instrument.

I could conceive no lesse then thus, and thus, when I beganne to surview that braving Empreffe ; and ever me thought, *Aut nunc, aut nunquam*, seemed to prognosticate greate tempestes at hande, and even such valorous workes of supererogation as woulde make an employed man of Florence or Venice, to breake day with any other important businesse of state, or traffique. I went on and on,

still and still loking for those prefaged woondermentes ; and thought it Platoes great yeare, till I hadd runne thorough the armed pikes, and felte the whole dinte of the two vengcable unlawfull weapons. But, I believe, never poore man found his imagination so hugely mocked as this confuting jugler coofened my expectation without meafure ; as if his whole drift had been nothinge else but a pleasurable comedy, or a mad stratagem (like thofe of Bacchus and Pan) queintlye devised to defeate the opinion of his credulous reader, and to furprife fimple minds with a moft unlikely event. A fine peece of conveiance in fome pageantes, and a brave defeigne in fitt place. Arte knoweth the pageants, and pollicy the place. In ernest, I expected nether an oratour of the ftewes, nor a poet of Bedlam, nor a knight of the alehowfe, nor a quean of the cuckingftole, nor a broker of baggage ftuffe, nor a pedler of Sraunge Newes, nor anye bafe trumperye or meane matters, when Pierce fhould racke his witt, and Penniles ftretch-out his courage to the uttermoft extent of his poffibility. But without more circumlocution, pryde hath a fall ; and as of a catt, fo of Pierce himfelfe, howfoever infpired or enraged, you can have but his kinne, puffed up withwinde and bumbafte with vanitye. Even when he ftryveth for life, to fhewe himfelfe bravelt in the flaunt-aflaunt of his courage ; and when a man would verily beleeve he fhould now behold the ftately perfonage of heroicall eloquence face to face, or fee fuch an unfeene frame of the miracles of arte, as might amaze the heavenly eye of astronomy. Holla, fir ! the sweete fpheres are not too-prodigall of their foveraine influences. Pardon mee, S. Fame. What the firft pang of his divine furie, but notable vanitye ; what the feconde fitte, but woorthy vanitye ?

what the thirde career, but egregious vanity: what the glory of his ruffian rhetorique and curtisan philosophy, but excellent villany. That, that is Pierces Supererogation; and were Penniles a person of any reckoning, as he is a man of notorious fame, that, that perhaps, in regarde of the outrageous singularity, might be supposed a tragicall or heroicall villany, if ever any villany were so intituled. The present consideration of which singularity occasioneth me to bethinke me of one, that this other day very soberlie commended some extraordinary giftes in Nashe; and when he had gravelie maintayned that, in the resolution of his conscience, he was such a fellowe as some wayes had few fellowes, at last concluded somewhat more roundly.

Well, my maisters, you may talke your pleasures of Tom Nash; who yet sleepeth secure, not without prejudice to some that might be more jelous of their name: but assure your selves, if M. Penniles had not bene deeply plunged in a profound exstasie of knavery, M. Pierce had never written that famous worke of Supererogation, that now slayneth all the bookes in Paules-churchyard, and setteth both the universities to schoole. Till I see your finest humanitie bestow such a liberall exhibition of conceit, and courage, upon your neatest wittes, pardon me though I prefer one smart pamphlet of knavery before ten blundring volumes of the nine Muses. Dreaming and smoke amount alike: life is a gaming, a juggling, a scoulding, a lawing, a skirmishing, a warre; a comedie, a tragedy: the stirring witt, a quintessence of quicksilver; and there is noe deade fleshe in affection, or courage. You may discourse of Hermes ascending spirit; of Orpheus enchaining harpe; of Homers divine furie; of Tyræus enraging trumpet; of Pericles bounding thunderclaps;

of Platos enthusiastically ravishment, and I wott not what marvelous egges in moonshine; but a flye for all your flying speculations, when one good fellow with his odd jestes, or one madd knave with his awke hibber-gibber, is able to putt dovene twentye of your smuggest artificiall men, that simper it so nicely and coylie in their curious pointes. Try, when you meane to be disgraced: and never give me credit, if sanguine witt putt not melancholy arte to bedd. I had almost said, all the figures of rhetorique must abate me an ace of Pierces Supererogation; and Penniles hath a certayne nimble and climbinge reach of invention, as good as a long pole and a hooke, that never fayleth at a pinch. It were unnaturall, as the sweete emperour Marcus Antoninus said, that the fig-tree should ever want juice. You that purpose with great summes of study and candles to purchase the worshipfull names of Dunses and Dodipoles, may closely sitt, or sokingly ly at your bookes; but you that intende to be fine companionable gentlemen, smirkinge wittes, and whipsters in the world, betake yee timely to the lively practis of the minion profession, and enure your mercuriall fingers to frame semblable workes of Supererogation. Certes, other rules are fopperies; and they that will seeke out the archmystery of the busiest modernistes, shall find it nether more nor lesse then a certayne pragmaticall secret, called Villany, the verie science of sciences, and the Familiar Spirit of Pierces Supererogation. Coosen not your selves with the gay-nothings of children and schollers: no privitie of learning, or inspiration of witt, or revelation of misteryes, or arte notory, countervayleable with Pierces Supererogation; which, having none of them, hath them all, and can make them all asses at his pleasure. The booke-worme was never but a pick-goose: it is the multiplying

spirit, not of the alchymist, but of the villanist, that knocketh the naile on the head, and spurreth cutt farther in a day then the quickest artist in a weeke. Whiles other are reading, wryting, conferring, arguing, discoursing, experimenting, platforminge, musing, buzzing, or I know not what, that is the spirrit, that with a woondrous dexterity shapeth exquisite workes, and atchieveth puissant exploites of Supererogation. O my good frends ! as ye love the sweete world, or tender your deare selves, be not unmindfull what is good for the advancemente of your commendable partes. All is nothing without advancement. Though my experience be a cipher in these causes, yet having studiously perused the newe artemotory, that is, the foresaid Supererogation, and having shaken so manie learned asses by the eares, as it were by the hands, I could say no lesse, and might thinke more.

Something else was uttered the same time by the same gentleman, as well concerning the present state of France, which he termed the most un-Christian kingdome of the most Christian kinge ; as touching certaine other newes of I wott not what dependence ; but my minde was running on my halspeny, and my head so full of the foresaid round discourse, that my hand was never quyet, untill I had altered the tytle of this pamphlet, and newlie christened it *Pierces Supererogation*, as well in remembrance of the saide discourse, as in honour of the appropriate vertues of Pierce himselfe ; who, above all the writers that ever I knew, shall go for my money where the currantest forgery, impudency, arrogancy, phantasticalitie, vanity, and great store of little discretion may go for payment, and the filthieft corruption of abhominable villany passe unlaunched. His other miraculous perfections are still in abeyance, and his monstrous ex-

cellencyes in the predicament of Chimera. The birde of Arabia is long in hatchinge ; and mightye workes of Supererogation are not plotted and accomplished attonce. It is pittie so hyperbolicall a conceite, overhawty for the surmounting rage of Tasso in his furious agony, should be humbled with so diminutive a witt ; base enough for Elder-ton and the riffe-raffe of the scribling rascality. I have heard of many disparagementes in felowship, but never saw so great impudency married to so little witt, or so huge presumption allyed to so petty performance. I must not paint, though hee dawbe. Pontan, decipher thy vaunting Alopantius Ausimarchides a new ; and Terence, display thy boasting Thrafo a new ; and Plautus, addresse thy vain-glorious Pyrgopolinices a new : heere is a bratt of arrogancy, a gosling of the printing-houfe, that can teach your braggardes to play their partes in the printe of woonder, and to exploit redowtable workes of Supererogation, such as never were atchieved in Latin or Greek ; which deserve to bee looked-for with such a longing expectation as the Jewes looke for their kingly Messias, or as I looke for Agrippas dreadfull Pyromachy ; for Cardans multiplied matter that shall delude the force of the canon ; for Acontius perfect arte of fortifieing little townes against the greatest battery ; for the Iliades of all courtly stratagems that Antony Niccobonus magnifically promifeth ; for his univerfall repertory of all histryes, contayning the memorable actes of all ages, all places, and all persons ; for the new Calepine of all learned and vulgar languages, written or spoken, whereof a loud rumour was lately published at Basill ; for a generall Pandectes of the lawes and statutes of all nations and commonwealthes in the worlde, largely

promised by Doctor Peter Gregorius, but compendiously performed in his *Syntagma Furis Univerſi*; for ſundry ſuch famous volumes of hugy miracles in the cloudes. Do not ſuch arch-woondermentes of ſupernaturall furniture deſerve arch-expectation? What ſhould the ſonnes of arte dreame of the philoſophers ſtone that, like Midas, turneth into golde whatſoever it toucheth, or of the ſoveraine and divine quinteſſence that, like Eſculapius, reſtoreth health to ſickneſſe; like Medea, youth to olde-age; like Apollornus life to death? No philoſophers ſtone or ſoveraine quinteſſence, howſoever precious precious, equivalent to ſuch divine woorkes of ſupererogation. O, high-minded Pierce! hadd the traine of your woordes and ſentences bene aunſwearable to the retinue of your bragges and threatens, or the robes of your apparaunce in perſon, ſuteable to the weedes of your oſtentation in tearmes, I would ſurely have beene the firſt that ſhould have proclaimed you the moſt ſingular ſecretary of this language, and the heavenlieſt creature under the ſpheres. Swete M. Aſcham, that was a flowing ſpring of humanity, and worthy Sir Phillip Sydney, that was a flouriſhing ſpring of nobility, muſt have pardoned me; I would directly have diſcharged my conſcience. But you muſt give plaine men leave to utter their opinion without courtinge: I honour high heads that ſtand upon low ſeet; I have no great affection to the gay fellowes that build up with their clambring hartes, and pull downe with their untoward hands. Give me the man that is meeke in ſpirit, lofty in zeale, ſimple in preſumption, gallant in endeavour, poore in profeſſion, riche in performance. Some ſuch I knowe; and all ſuch I value highly. They glory not of the golden ſtone, or the youthfull quinteſſence; but

industrie is their goulden stone, action their youthfull quintessence, and valour their divine worke of Supererogation. Everye one may thinke as he listeth, and speake as he findeth occasion ; but in my fancy they are simply the simplest fellows of al other that boast they will exploite miracles, and come short in ordinarie reckonings. Great matters are no woonders when they are menaced or promised with big othes ; and small thinges are marvels when they are not expected or suspected. I wondred to heare that Kelly had gotten the Golden Fliece, and by vertue therof was sodenly advaunced into so honorable reputation with the Emperours Majestye ; but would have woondred more to have seene a woorke of Supererogation from Nashe, whose witt must not enter the listes of comparison with Kellyes alchimy, howsoever, he would seeme to have the greene lion and the flying eagle in a boxe. But Kelly will bidd him looke to the swolne toade and the daunsing foole. Kelly knoweth his *Lutum Sapientiæ*, and useth his tearmes of arte. Silence is a great misterye, and lowde wordes but a cowe-herds horne. He that breedeth mountaynes of hope, and with much adoe begetteth a molehill (shall I tell him a newe tale in ould Englishe ?) beginneth like a mightie oxe, and endeth like a sory asse. To atchieve it without ostentation is a notable prayse ; but to vaunt it without atchevement, or to threaten it without effecte, is but a dubble prooffe of a simple witt. Execution sheweth the hability of the man ; presumption bewraieth the vanitie of the mind. The funne sayth not, I will thus and thus displaye my glorious beames, but shineth indeede ; the springe braggeth not of gallant flowers, but florisheth indeede ; the harveft boasteth not of plentifull fruit, but fructifieth in

deede. Æsops fellowes being asked what they could doe, answered they could do any thing ; but Æsope, making a small shewe, could doe much indeede : the Greeke sophisters, knowing nothings in comparison (knowledge is a dry water), professed a skill in all thinges ; but Socrates, knowing in a manner all things (Socrates was a springing rocke), professed a skill in nothings ; Lullius and his sectaryes have the signet of Hermes, and the admirable arte of disputinge infinitely *de omni scibili* ; but Agrippa, one of the universallest schollars that Europe hath yeelded, and such a one as some learned men of Germany, France, and Italie intituled the Omniscious Doctour, socraticallie declameth against the vanitie of sciences, and for my comforte penneth the Apology of the Asse. Never any of these prating vagabundes had the vertuous elixir, or other important secret (yet who such monarches for phisique, chirurgery, spagirique, astrology, palmastry, naturall and supernaturall magique, necromancy, familiar-spiritshipp, and all profound cunninge, as some of these arrant impostours ?) hee is a Pythagorean, and a close fellow of his tongue and pen, that hath the right *magisterium* indeede, and can dispatch with the finger of art that they promis with the mouth of cofenage. They that vaunt do it not, and they that pretend least accomplish most. High-spirited Pierce doe it indeede that thou crakest in vaine, and I will honour thy worke, that scorne thy worde. When there was no neede, thy breath was the mouth of Ætna, and, like a Cyclops, thou didst forge thunder in Mongibello. Now the warring planet was expected in person, and the Fiery Trigon seemed to give the alarme ; *thou talkest of cattes meate and dogges meate enough* : and wilt try it out by the teeth at the signe of the dogs-

head in the pot. Oh, what a chatering monkey is here! and, oh, what a dog-fly is the dog-ftarr proved! Elderton would have answered this geere out-of-cry; or, had I the witt of Scoggin, I could say some thing to it: but I looked for cattles meate in *aqua fortis*, and dogs meat in gunpowder, and can no skill of these termes, steeped in thy mothers gutter and thy fathers kennel. Na, if you will needes strike it as dead as a dore naile, and run upon me with the blade of cattles meate, and the fierbrond of dogges meate, I have doone; or, in case your meaning be, as you stoutely protest, to trounce me after twenty in the hundred, *and to have a bout with me with two staves and a pyke*, like a tall fellowe of Cracovia, there is no dealing for short weapons. Young Martin was an ould hackfter; and had you plaid your maisters pryzes in his time, he peradventure durfte have looked those two staves in the face, and would have desired that pike of some more acquaintance; but truce keepe me out of his handes, that fighteth furiously with two staves of cattles meate, and a pyke of dogges meate; and is resolutely bente the best blood of the brothers shall pledge him in vineger. Happy it is noe worfe then vineger! a good sawce for cattles meate and dogges meate. Gentlemen, you that thinke prommisse a bonde, and ufe to performe more then you threaten, never beleeve Braggadocio againe for his fake. When he hath done his best and his worst, trust me, or credit your owne eies, his best best is but cattles meate, and his worst worst but doggs-meate enough. What, should I goe circuiting about the bushe? He taketh the shortest cutt to the wood, and dispatcheth all controversies in a few significant termes; not those of gunpowder, which would aske some charging,

and discharging, but these of dogges-meat, which are up with a vomit. He that is not so little as the third Cato from heaven, or the eight wise-man upon earth, may speake with authority, and christen me *a dunse, a foole, an ideot, a dolt, a goose-capp, an asse*, and I wot not what, as filthy as filthy may be. Dogged impudency hath his proper idiotisme, and very clarkly scholeth the eares of modestie to spell fa-fe-fi-fo-fu. Simple wittes would be dealt playnly withall: I stand not upon coye or nice poyntes, but am one of those that would gladlie learne their owne imperfections, errors, and follies in *specialissima specie*. Be it knowne unto all men by these presentes, that Thomas Nashe, from the topp of his witt looking downe upon simple creatures, calleth Gabriell Harvey a dunse, a foole, an ideot, a dolt, a goose-capp, an asse, and soe fourth (for some of the residue is not to be spoken but with his owne manerly mouth); but the wise man in printe should have done well in his learned confutation to have shewed particulerlie which woords in my letters were the wordes of a dunse; which sentences, the sentences of a foole; which arguments, the arguments of an ideot; which opinions, the opinions of a dolt; which judgements, the judgements of a goose-cap; which conclusions, the conclusions of an asse. Eyther this wold be dun (for I suppose he would be loth to prove some asses, that in favour have written otherwise, and in reason are to verifie their owne testimonies), or he must be fayne himselfe to eate his owne cattles-meate and dogges-meat; and swallow downe a dunse, a foole, an ideot, a dolt, a goose-cap, an asse in his owne throate, the proper case of his filthiest excrements, and the sinke of the famous rascal, that had rather be a poulcatt with a stinkinge stur then a

musk-cat with gracious favor. Pardon me, gentle Civilitie : if I did not tender you, and disclame impudency, I could do him some peece of right, and shew him his well favored face in a cristall as true as Galcoignes Steele-glas. But *trust him not for a dodkin* (it is his owne request), *if I ever did my Doctors Actes* ; which a thowfsand heard in Oxforde, and some knew to be done with as little premeditation as ever such actes were done ; for I answered upon the 'questions that were given me by Doctor Cathedræ but two dayes before ; and read my curfory lecture with a dayes warning : or if I be not *A Fawne-guest messenger betweene M. Christopher Bird*, in whose company I never dined or supped these six yeares, and *M. Emmanuell Demetrius*, with whom I never dranke to this day. Other matters, touching *her Highnesse affabilitie toward Schollers*, (so her Majesties favour to mee must bee interpreted) the *privy watch-word of honourable men* in their letters commendatory, *even in the highest degree of praying* (so our high chauncellours commendation must bee quallified) Nashes grave censure of *publike invectives and satyres* (so Harveys flight opinion of contentious and seditious libels must be crosbitten) his testimony of *Ciceroes consolation ad Dolabellam* (which he will needes father upon me in reproch, though his betters wil never pen such a peece of Latin, whosoever wer the stepp-Tully) his derision of the most profitable and valorous *mathematical arts* (whose industrie hath atcheeved woonders of mightier puissance then the labours of Hercules ;) his contempt of *the worthiest persones* in every faculty (which he alwayes censureth as his punyes and underlinges) *his palpable athcisme, and drinkinge a cup of lammeswool to the Lambe* of God ; his gibinge at *Heaven*

(the haven where my deceased brother is arrived), with a deepe cut out of his gramer rules, *aftra petit difertus*: the very ftarres are fcarres where he lifteth; and a hundred fuch and fuch particularities, that requier fum larger difcoulfe, fhew him to be a youngman of the greeneft fpringe, as beardles in judgement as in face, and as penniles in witt as in purfe. It is the leaft of his famous adventures that he undertaketh to be *Greenes advocate*, as divine Plato afayed to defend Socrates at the barr; and I knowe not whether it be the leaft of his dowtye exploites, that he falveth his frendes credit, as that excellent difciple faved his maifters life. He may declare his decre affection to his paramour; or his pure honeftye to the world; or his conftant zeale to play the Divels Oratour; but noe apology of Greene, like *Greenes Grotes-worth of Witt*; and when Nafh will indeede accomplifh a worke of Supererogation, let him publifh Nafhes *Penniworth of Difcretion*. If he be learneded or wifer then other in fo large an affife, as fhould appeare by the reporte of his owne mouth, it is the better for him; but it were not amiffe he fhould fumtime looke-backe to the budget of ignorance and folly that hangeth behind him, as otherwhiles he condefcendeth to glaunce at the fatchell of his grammar bookes. Calumny, and her coofen-german impudency, wil not alwaies hould-hout rubbers; and they neede not greatlie bragge of their harveft, that make phantafie the roote, vanity the ftalke, follye the eare, penurye the cropp, and shame the whole fubftance of their ftuddies. To be over-bould with one or two is fomething: to be fawcy with many is much: to fpare few or none is odious: to be impudent with all is intollerable. There were fayre play enough, though foule play were debarred; but boyes, fooles,

and knaves, take all in snuffe, when the variance might be debated in the language of curtesie : and nothing but horfe-play will ferve, where the colt is disposed to play the jade. Did I list to persecute him in his own vaine, or were I not restrained with respective termes of divine and civill moderation, ô, Aretin ! how pleasurably might I canvas the bawling cur, in a tossing sheete of paper : or ô, Gryfon ! who could more easilie discover a newe arte of riding a headstrong beaste ? But that which Nashe accounteth the bravery of his witt and the dubble creast of his style, I am in discretion to cut-of, and in modesty yeeld it his onely glorye to have the fowlest mouth that I ever sawe, and the strongest breath that I ever fealt. When witty girding faileth, as it pitifully fayleth in every page of that Super-arrogatory worke, Lord ! what odious baggage, what rascal stuffe, what villanous trumpery filleth-upp the leafe : and howe egregiously would he playe the vengeable sycophant, if the conveyance of his arte or witt were in anye measure of proportion correspondent to his pestilent stomacke ! But in the fellest fitt of his furye, even when he runneth upon me with openest mouth, and his spite, like a poysonous toade, swelleth in the full, as if some huge timpany of witt would presentlye possesse his braine, or some horrible fiery spright would flye in my face, and blast me to nothing : then, good Dick Tarleton is dead, and nothing alive but cattles-meat and dogges-meat enough. Na, were it not that hee hadd dealt politiquely in providinge himself an autenticall suerty, or rather a mighty protectour at a pinch, such a devoted freend and inseparable companion, as Æneas was to Achates, Pylades to Orestes, Diomedes to Ulysses, Achilles to Patroclus, and Hercules to Theseus, doubtlesse hee had beene

utterly undone. Compare olde and new histories, of farre and neere countries, and you shall finde the late manner of *sworne brothers* to be no new fashion, but an auncient guife and heroicall order, devised for necessity, continued for security, and maintayned for proffite and pleasure. In bravest actions, in weightiest negotiations, in hardest distresses, in how many cases, one man no boddy, and a dayly frend as necessary as our dayly bread. No treasure more precious, no bonde more indefeible, no castle more impregnable, no force more invincible, no trueth more infallible, no element more needefull then an entire and assured associate; ever prest, aswell in calamity to comfort, or in adversity to relieve as in prosperity to congratulate, or in advauncement to honour. Life is sweete, but not without sweete societie; and an inward affectionate frend (as it were *an other the same, or a second selfe,*) the very life of life, and the sweet-harte of the hart. Nashe is learned, and knoweth his Leripup. Where was Euryalus, there was Nifus; where Damon, there Pythias; where Scipio, there Lælius; where Apollonius, there Damides; where Proclus, there Archiadas; where Pyrocles, there Musidorus; where Nashe, there his Nifus, his Pythias, his Lælius, his Damides, his Archiadas, his Musidorus, his indivisible companion, with whose puissant helpe hee conquereth wheresoever he raungeth. Na, Homer not such an author for Alexander; nor Xenophon for Scipio; nor Virgil for Augustus; nor Justin for Marcus Aurelius; nor Livy for Theodosius Magnus; nor Cæsar for Selymus; nor Philip de Comines for Charles the fift; nor Macchiavell for some late princes; nor Aretin for some late curtefans, as his authour for him, the sole authour of renowned victorie. Marvel not that Erasmus hath

penned the Encomium of Folly, or that so many singular learned men have laboured the commendation of the asse : he it is that is the godfather of writers, the superintendent of the presse, the muster-maister of innumerable bands, the generall of the great fieldes : hee and Nashe will confute the world. And where is the ægles quill that can sufficiently advance the first spoiles of their new conquestes ? Whist, sory pen ! and be advised how thou presume above the highest pitch of thy possibility. Hee that hath christened so many notable authours, censured so many eloquent pennes, enrowled so many worthy garrifones, and encamped for many noble and reverend lordes, may be bould with me. If I be an asse, I have company enough ; and if I be no asse, I have favour to be enstalled in such companye. The name will shortly grow in request, as it sometime flourished in glorious Rome ; and who then will not sue to be free of that honorable company ? Whiles they are ridden, I desire not to be spared : when the hott-spurr is aweary with tyring them, he wil scarsly troble himself with a skin ; or, if he do, I may chance acquaint him with a secret indiftillation. He that drinketh oyle of prickes shall have much adoee to voide syrup of roses ; and he that eateth nettles for provander hath a priviledg to pisse upon lillyes for litter. Poules Wharfe honour the memorye of oulde John Hester, that would not sticke with his frende for twentye such experimentes ; and would often tell me of a *magistral unguent* for all fores. Who knoweth not that magistral unguent knoweth nothing, and who hath that magistral unguent feareth no gunshott. The confuter meant to be famous, like Poggius that altobe-assef Valla, Trapezuntius, and their defendantes, many learned Italians,

or might have given a geffe at fome possible afterclaps, as good as a prognostication of an after-winter. Though Pierce Penniles, for a spurt, were a ranke rider, and, like an arrant knight, overran nations with a carrecr, yet Thomas Nashe might have been advifed, and in pollicy have spared them, that in compaffion favoured him, and were unfaynedlye fory to finde his miserable eftate, aswell in his ftyle as in his purfe, and in his wit as in his fortune. Some complexions have much adoee to alter their nature, and Nashe wil carrie a tache of Pierce to his grave (we have worfe proverbes in Engliſhe ;) yet who ſeith not what apparent good my letters have done him, that before overcrowd all commers and goers with like difcretion, but now, forfooth, hath learned ſome fewe handſome termes of reſpecte, and verye mannerly beclaweth a fewe, that he might the more licentiouſly beſmeere one. S. Fame give him joye of his black cole, and his white chalke !

Who is not limed with ſome default, or who reddier to confeſſe his own imperfections then myſelfe ? but when, in profeſſed hatred like a mortal feudiſt, he hath uttered his very uttermoſt ſpite, and wholly disgorged his rancorous ſtomacke, yet can he not ſo much as deviſe any particular action of trespas, or object any certaine vice againſt me, but only one grevous crime, called pumps and pantofles (which, indeede, I have worne ever ſince I knew Cambridge) and his owne deereſt hart-root, pride ; which, I proteſt before God and man, my ſoule in judgment as much deteſteth as my body in nature lotheth poyſon, or any thing abhorreth his deadlye enemy, even amongſt thoſe creatures which are found fatally contrary by naturall antipathy. It is not exceſſe, but defecte of pride, that hath broken the head of

some mens preferment. Aspiring mindes can foare aloft ; and selfe-conceit, with the countenance of audacity, the tongue of impudency, and the hand of dexterity, preaseth bouldly into the forwardest throng of the shouldring ranke, whiles discretion hath leasure to discourse, whether some-deale of modesty were meeter for manye that presume above their condition, and some deale of selfe-liking fitter for some that have sealt no greater want then want of pride. It may seeme a rude disposition that sorteth not with the quality of the age ; and pollicy deemeth that vertue a vice, that modesty, simplicity, that resolutenes, dissolutenes, that conformeth not it selfe with a supple and deft correspondence to the present time. But no such oxe, in my mind, as Tarquinius Superbus : no such calfe as Spurius Mælius : no such colt as Publius Clodius : no such ape as Lucians Rhetorician, or the Divels Oratour. Blind ambition, a noble bayarde ; proud arrogancy, a goulden asse ; vaine conceit, a gaudy peacocke ; all bravery that is not effectuall, a gay nothing. He upbraideth me with his own good nature ; but where such an insolent braggard, or such a puffing thing as himselfe, that in magnifying his owne bable, and debasing me, revileth them, whose bookes or pantofles he is not worthy to beare ? If I be an asse, what asses were those courteous frendes, those excellent learned men, those worshipfull and honorable personages, whose letters of undeserved, but singular, commendation may be shewen ? What an asse was thifelse, when thou didst publish my praise amongst the notablest writers of this realme ? or what an asse art thifself that, in the spitefullest outrage of thy maddest confutation, dost otherwhiles enterlace some remembrances of more account then I can acknowledge without vanity, or desier

without ambition? The truth is, I ſtande as little upon others commendations, or mine owne titles, as any man in England whoſoever: if there be nothing els to ſolicite my cauſe, but being ſo ſhamefully and intollerably provoked in the moſt villanous termes of reproch, I were indeede a notorious inſenfate aſſe, in caſe I ſhould eyther ſottifiſhly neglect the reputation of ſoe worthy favorers, or uttery abandon mine owne credit. Sweet gentlemen, renowned knightes, and honorable lordes, be not aſhamed of your letters, imprinted, or written: if I live, ſeeing I muſt eyther live in *tenebris* with obloquy, or in *luce* with prooſe, by the leave of God, I will proove miſelfe no aſſe. I ſpeake not onely to M. Bird, M. Spencer, or Monſieur Bodin, whom he nothinge regardeth (yet I would his owne learning or judgmente were anye way matchable with the worſt of the three) but amongſt a number of fundrie other learned and gallant gentlemen, to M. Thomas Watſon, a notable poet; to M. Thomas Hatcher, a rare antiquary; to M. Daniel Rogers of the court; to Doctör Griffin Floyd, the Queenes profeſſour of lawe at Oxforde; to Doctör Peter Baro, a profeſſour of divinity in Cambridg; to Doctör Bartholomew Clark, late Deane of the Arches; to Doctör William Lewen, Judge of the Prerogative Court; to Doctör John Thomas Freigius, a famous writer of Germany; to Sir Philip Sidney; to M. Secretary Wilſon; to Sir Thomas Smith; to Sir Walter Mildmay; to milord the Biſhop of Rocheſter; to milord Treafurer; to milord the Earle of Leiceſter, unto whoſe worſhipfull and honorable favours I have been exceedingly beholding for letters of extraordinary commendation; ſuch, as ſome of good experience have doubted whether they ever voutfaſed the like unto

any of either university. I beseech God I may deserve the least parte of their good opinion, eyther in effectuall prooffe, or in dutifull thankefullnesse; but how little soever I presume of mine owne sufficiency (he that knoweth himselfe hath si[g]nal cause to conceive any high hope of low meanes) as in reason I was not to flatter miselfe with their bountifull commendation; so in judgement I am not to agreee miselfe with the odious detraction of this pestilent libeller, or any like despiteous slanderer, but in patience am to digest the one with moderation, as in temperance I qualified the other with modesty. Some would say, what is the peevishe grudge of one beggarly rakehell, to so honorable liking of so many excellent and some singular men? but God in heaven teach me to take good by my adversaries invective, and no harme by my favourers approbation. It is neither the one nor the other, that deserveth evill or well; but the thing it selfe that edifieth, without which praise is smoke, and with which dispraise is fyer. Let me enjoy that essential point, and hauke, or hunt, or fishe after praise you that list. Many contumelious and more glorious reports have passed from enemies and friends without cause, or upon smal occasion: that is the onely infamy that cannot acquit it selfe from guiltinesse; and that the only honor that is grounded upon desert. Other winds of diffamation want matter to upholde it; and other shadowes of glory lacke a body to support it. In unhappinesse they are happy, of whose bad amounteth good; and in unhappinesse they unhappy, whose good proveth bad: as glory eftsoones followeth them, that fly from it, and flyeth from them, that followe it. There is a terme probatory that will not ly; and commendations are never autenticall, until they bee

signed with the seale of approoved desert, the only infallible testimoniall. Desert (maugre envy, the companion of vertue) Socrates high waye to honour; and the totall summe of Oforius *De Gloria*. I will not enter into Macchiavels Discourfes, Jovius Elogyes, Cardans Nativities, Cosmopolites Dialogues, or later histories in dyvers languages; but some worthelye continue honorable, whom they make dishonorable, and contrariwise. Reason hath an even hande, and dispenfeth to everye one his right. Arte amplifieth or extenuateth at occasion: the residue is the liberality of the pen, or the poyson of the inke: in logique, sophistrie; in law, injury; in historie, a fable; in divinity, a lye. Horace, a sharpe and sententious poet, after his pithy manner, comprizeth much in fewe wordes:

*Falsus honor juvat, et mendax infamia terret,
Quem, nisi mendacem, et mendosum?*

For mine owne part, I am reasonably resolute both wayes, and stand affraide of phantasticall discredit, as I esteeme imaginative credit, or a contemplative banquet. It fitteth not with the profession of a philosopher, or the constancie of a man, to carrye the minde of a childe. or an youth, or a woman, or a slave, or a tyrant, or a beast. That resteth not in my power to reforme or alter, I were very unwise if I should not endure with patience, mitigate with reason, and contemne with pleasure. Onely I can be content, in certain behoovefull respects, to yeeld a peece of a satisfaction unto some that requier it in affectionate termes; and what honest minde, in case of mortalitie, hath not a care, how the posterity may be informed of him? Other reasons I have elsewhere assigned, and am here to present a vowe to humilitie, in detestation of that which my disposition abhorreth.

As for his lewd supposals and imputations of counterfait praises, without anye probability of circumstance, or the least suspition, but in his owne vengeable malicious head, the common forge of pestilent surmyzes and arrant slaunders, they are, like my imprisonment in the Fleete, of his strong fantasie, and doe but intimate his owne skill in falsifying of evidence, and fuborning of witnesse to his purpose. He museth, as he useth ; and the goodwife his mother would never have fought her daughter in the ooven, if herselfe had not beene well acquainted with such shiftes of cunninge conveiance. He was never a *non proficient* in good matters; and hath not studied his fellowes arte of cunny catching for nothinge. Examin the Printers gentle Preamble before the Supplication to the Divell, and tell me in good sooth, by the verdicte of the Tuchstone, whether Pierce Penniles commende Pierce Penniles, or no; and whether that sory praise of the Authour Thomas Nashe, be not lothsome from the mouthe of the Printer Thomas Nashe. In conjectural causes I am not to avouch any thinge, and I mentioned not any such supposition before; but the tenour of the style, and as it were the identitie of the phrase, together with this newe descant of his profound insight in forgery, may after a sort tel tales out of the tytle *De Secretis non revelandis*, and yeld a certain strong favour of a vehement presumption. There is pregnant evidence enough, though I leave probable conjectures and violent presumptions wher I found them. His Life daily feedeth his stile; and his stile notoriously bewraieth his Life. But what is that to me, or the world, howe Nashe liveth; or howe the poore fellowe his father hath put him to his foisting and scribbling shiftes, his onely *gloria patri*, when all is done. Rule thy

desperate infamous penne, and bee the sonne of a mule, or the printers gentleman, or what thou wilt for me. If thou wilt needs derive thy pettigree from the noble blood of the Kilprickes and Childeberds, kinges of France, what commission have I to sitt upon genealogies, or to call nobilitie in question? If thou beist disposed to speake as thou livest, and to live like Tonosconcoleros, the famous Babylonian king, in curtesy or in pollicy forbear one that is not over-hafty to trouble himselfe with trobling other. What I have heard credibly reported, I can yet be content to smother in silence, and nether threaten thee with Tiburne, nor Newgate, nor Ouldgate, nor Counter, nor Fleete, nor any publique penance, but wilhe thy amendment; and dare not be too-fawcy with your good qualities, les[t] you confute my Maistership of Arte, as you have done my Doctorship of Lawe. Never poore Doctorship was foe confuted. The best is, I dote not upon it; and would rather be actually degraded then any way disparage the degree, or derogate from them that are worthier of it. Rest you quiet, and I will not onely not struggle with you for a tytle, but offer here to renounce the whole advantage of a late inquisition, upon a clamorous denunciation of S. Fame herselfe, who presumed she might be as bould to play the blab with you, as you were to play the floven with her. Or if your pen be so ranke that it cannot stande upon any grounde but the foile of calumny, in the muck-yard of impudency, or your tongue foe laxative that it must utterly utter a great horrible deale more then all; whuist a while, and for your instruction, til some pregnanter lessons come abrode, I will breefely tell you in your care a certaine familiar history, of more then one or two breakefastes, wherein some eight or

nine eggs, and a pound of butter for your pore part, with Gods plenty of other victuals, and wine enough, powred-in by quartes and pottels, was a scant pittance for an invincible stomach, two houres before his ordinary. I have readd of Apicius and Epicures Philosophy, but I perceave you meane not to be accounted a Pythagorean or a Stoique. What! gorge upon gorge, egges upon egges, and sacke upon sacke at these yeares? Berlady, Sir Kilpricke, you must provide for a hott kitchin againste you growe ould, if you purpose to live Doctor Pernes or Doctor Renols yeares. Such egging and whitling may happen bring you acquainted with the triumphant chariot of rotten egges, if you take not the better order in tyme, with one or two of the seven deadly finnes. I will not offend your stomacke with the nice and queint regiment of the dainty Platonistes, or pure Pythagoreans: fine Theurgy, too-gant and meager a doctrine for the divels oratour: if the arte notory cannot be gotten without fasting and praying, muchgoditch-them that have it: let phantasticall or superstitious abstinence daunce in the aier, like Aristophanes Clowdes, or Apuleius Witches: your owne method of those deadly finnes be your Castell of Health. No remedy, you must be dieted, and lett blood in the cephalica veine of asses, fooles, doltes, ideots, dunfes, dodipoules, and so foorth infinitely; and never trust me, if you be not as tame tonged and barren-witted as other honest men of Lumbardy and the Low-Cuntries. Tushe, man! I see deeper into thee then thou seeist into thy selfe: thou hast a superficiall tange of some little something, as good as nothing; and a running witt as fisking as any fiskig, but as shallow as Trumpington foorde, and as slight as the newe workmanship of guegawes to please

children, or of toys to mocke apes, or of trinketts to conquer savages. Only in that singular veine of asses thou art incomparable, and such an egregious arrant foole-munger as liveth not againe. She knew what she said that intituled Pierce the hoggeshead of witt; Penniles, the tospot of eloquence; and Nashe, the verie inventor of asses. She it is that must broach the barrell of thy frisking conceite, and canonise the patriarke of newe writers.

I will not heere decipher thy unprinted packet of bawdye and filthy rymes in the nastiest kind: there is a fitter place for that discovery of thy foulest shame, and the whole ruffianisme of thy brothell Muse, if she still prostitute her obscene ballatts, and will needes be a younge curtisan of ould knavery. Yet better a confuter of letters then a confounder of manners; and better the dogges-meate of Agrippa, or cattles-meate of Poggius, then the swines-meate of Martial, or goates-meate of Aretine. Cannot an Italian ribald vomit out the infectious poyson of the world, but an Inglishe horrel-lorrel must licke it up for a restorative, and attempt to putrify gentle mindes with the vilest impostumes of lewde corruption? Phy on impure Ganimeds, Hermaphrodits, Neronists, Messalinists, Dodecomechanists, Capricians, inventours of newe, or revivers of old leacheries, and the whole brood of venereous libertines, that knowe no reason but appetite, no lawe but luste, no humanitie but villanye, noe divinity but atheisme! Such riotous and incestuous humours would be launced, not feasted: the divell is eloquent enough to play his owne oratour: his damme, an old bawde, wanteth not the broccage of a young poet: wanton sprites were alwayes busie, and Duke Allocer, on his lustye cocke-horfe, is a whot familiar. The sonnes of Adam, and

the daughters of Eve, have noe neede of the serpent's carrowse to set them agogg; Sodome still burneth; and although fier from heaven spare Gomorra, yet Gomorra stil consumeth it selfe. Even amorous sonnets, in the gallantest and sweetest civill veine, are but daintyes of a pleasurable witt, or junkets of a wanton liver, or buddes of an idle head: whatsoever sprowteth farther would be lopped. Petrarckes invention, is pure love it selfe; and Petrarckes elocution, pure bewty it selfe: his Laura was the Daphne of Apollo, not the Thisbe of Pyramus; a delitious Sappho, not a lascivious Lais; a saving Hester, not a destroying Helena; a nimph of Diana, not a curtisan of Venus. Aretines Muse was an egregious bawd, and a haggishe witch of Thessalia; but Petrarck's verse a fine loover, that learneth of Mercury to exercise his fayrest giftes in a faire subject, and teacheth wit to be inamored upon beautye, as quicksilver embraseth gold; or as vertue affecteth honour; or as astronomy gazeth upon heaven, to make arte more excellent by contemplation of excellentest nature. Petrarck was a delicate man, and with an elegant judgement graciously confined love within the limits of honour, witt within the boundes of discrecion, eloquence within the termes of civility; as not many years sithence, an Inglish Petrarck did, a singular gentleman, and a sweete poet; whose verse singeth as valour might speake; and whose ditty is an image of the sun, voutsafing to represent his glorious face in a clowde. All posterity honour Petrarck, that was the harmony of heaven; the lyfe of poetry; the grace of arte; a precious tablet of rare conceits, and a curious frame of exquisite workmanship: nothing but neate witt and refined eloquence. Were the amorous muse of my enemy such a

lively spring of sweetest flowres, and such a living harvest of ripest fruits, I would abandon other loves, to dote upon that most lovely muse; and would debase the dyamant in comparison of that most dyamant muse. But out upon ranke and lothsome ribaldry! that putrifieth where it should purify, and presumeth to deflowre the moſte flourishing wittes with whom it consorteth, eyther in familiarity or by favour. One Ovid was too much for Roome, and one Greene too much for London; but one Nashe more intolerable then both: not bicause his witt is anye thinge comparable, but bicause his will is more outrageous. Ferrara could scarcely brooke Manardus, a poyſonous phisitian; Mantua hardly beare Pomponatius, a poyſonous philosopher; Florence more hardly tollerate Macchiavel, a poyſonous politician; Venice most hardly endure Arretine, a poyſonous ribald: had they lived in absolute monarchies, they would have seemed utterly insupportable. Germany, Denmarke, Sweden, Polony, Boemia, Hungary, Moscovy, are noe soiles of any such wittes; but neither Fraunce, nor Spaine, nor Turky, nor any puissant kingdom, in one or other monarchy of the old or new world, could ever abide any such pernicious writers, depravers of common discipline. Ingland, since it was Ingland, never bred more honorable mindes, more adventurous hartes, more valorous handes, or more excellent wittes, then of late: it is enough for filly-folly to intoxicate it selfe, though it be not suffered to defyle the lande, which the water environeth, the earth enricheth, the aier ensweeteneth, and the heaven bleſseth. The bounteous graces of God are sowne thicke, but come up thin; corruption had little need to be fostred; wantonnesse wilbe a nurse, a bawde, a poet, a legend to it selfe:

vertue hath much a doe to hold out inviolably her purposed course; resolution is a forward fellow, and valour a brave man; but affections are infections, and appetite must sometime have his swinge. Were appetite a loyall subject to reason, and will an affectionate servant to wisdom, as labour is a dutiful vassal to commodity, and travail a flying post to honour, ô heavens! what exploits of worth, or rather what miracles of excellency, might be atcheeved in an age of pollicy, and a world of industry. The date of idle vanities is expired: away with these scribbling paltries! there is an other Sparta in hande, that indeede requireth Spartan temperance, Spartan frugality, Spartan exercise, Spartan valiancy, Spartan perfeverance, Spartan invincibility, and hath no wanton leasure for the comedyes of Athens, nor anye bawdy howers for the songes of Priapus, or the rymes of Nashe. Had he begun to Aretinize when Elderton began to ballat, Gascoigne to sonnet, Turbervile to madrigal, Drant to versify, or Tarleton to extemporise, some parte of his phantastickall bibble-bables and capricious panges might have bene tollerated in a greene and wild youth; but the winde is chaunged, and there is a busier pageant upon the stage. M. Aschams Toxophilus long sithence shot at a fairer marke; and M. Gascoigne himselfe, after some riper experience, was glad to trye other conclusions in the Lowe Countryes, and bestowed an honorable commendation upon Sir Humfrye Gilbertes gallant discourse of a discovery for a newe passage to the East Indyas. But read the report of the worthy Westerne discoveries by the said Sir Humfry Gilbert; the report of the brave West-Indian voyage by the conduction of Sir Frauncis Drake; the report of the horrible septentrionall discoveries by the travail of Sir

Martin Forbisher ; the report of the politique discovery of Virginia by the colony of Sir Walter Raleigh ; the report of fundry other famous discoveries and adventures, published by M. Rychard Hackluit in one volume, a worke of importance ; the report of the hoatt wellcom of the terrible Spanishe Armada to the coast of Inglande, that came in glory, and went in dishonour ; the report of the redoubted voyage into Spaine and Portugall, whence the brave Earle of Essex, and the twoo valorous generals, Sir John Norris and Sir Frauncis Drake, returned with honour ; the report of the resolute encounter about the Iles Azores, betwixt the *Revenge* of England and an Armada of Spaine, in which encounter brave Sir Richard Grinvile most vigorously and impetuously attempted the extreamest possibilities of valour and fury. For brevity I overskipp many excellent traicts of the same or the like nature ; but reade these, and M. William Borrowghes notable discourse of the variation of the compas or magneticall needle, annexed to the new Attractive of Robert Norman, hydographer : unto which two Ingland in some respectes is as much beholding, as Spayne unto Martin Cortes, and Peter de Medina for the arte of navigation ; and when you have observed the course of industry, examined the antecedents and consequents of travail, compared English and Spanish valour, measured the forces of both parties, weighed every circumstance of advantage, considered the meanes of our assurance, and finally found profit to be our pleasure, provision our security, labour our honour, warfare our welfare, who of reckoning can spare anye lewde or vaine tyme for corrupt pamphlets, or who of judgment will not cry, Away with these paultringe fiddle-faddles ! When Alexander, in his conquerous expedi-

tions visited the ruines of Troy, and revolved in his minde the valiant actes of the heroicall woorthies there atchieved, one offered to bring his majesty the harpe of Paris : Let it alone, quoth hee ; it is the harpe of Achilles that must serve my turne. Paris uppon his harpe sang voluptuous and lascivious carols ; Achilles harpe was an instrument of glory, and a quier of divine hymnes consecrated to the honour of valarous captaines and mighty conquerours. He regarded not the dainety Lydian, Ionian, or Æolian melody, but the brave Dorian and impetuous Phrygian musique, and waged Zenophantus to inflame and enrage his courage with the furious notes of battail. One Alexander was a thousand examples of prowesse ; but Pyrrhus, the redoubted king of the Epirots, was an other Alexander in tempestuous execution, and in a most noble resolution contemned the vanities of unnoble pastimes ; in so much that, when one of his barons asked his majestie, whether of the two musitians, Charisius or Python, pleased his highnesse better ? Whether of the two ? quoth Pyrrhus : marry, Polysperces shall go for my money. He was a brave captaine for the eie, and a fitt musitian for the eare of Pyrrhus. Happy Polysperces, that served such a master, and happy Pyrrhus, that commaunded such a servaunt ! Were some demaunded, whether Greenes or Nashes pamphlets were better penned, I beleieve they would aunswear ; Sir Roger Williams Discourse of War, for Militare Doctrine *in esse* ; and M. Thomas Digges Stratoticos, for Militare Discipline *in esse*. And whiles I remember the princely care of Gelo, a famous tyrant of Sicill (many tyrants of Sicill were very politique) that commaunded his great horse to be brought into the banquetting house, where other lordes called for

the harpe, other knightes for the waites, I cannot forget the gallant discourse of Horsemanship, penned by a rare gentleman, M. John Asteley of the court, whome I dare intitle our English Xenophon, and marvell not that Pietro Bizzaro, a learned Italian, propofeth him for a perfect patterne of Castilios Courtier. And thinking upon worthy M. Asteley, I cannot overpasse the like labour of good M. Thomas Blundevil without due commendation, whose painefull and skillfull bookes of Horsemanship deserve also to be registred in the Catalogue of Xenophontian woorkes. What should I speake of the two brave knightes, Musidorus and Pyrocles, combined in one excellent knight, Sir Philip Sidney? at the remembrance of whose woorthy and sweete vertues my hart melteth. Will you needes have a written Pallace of Pleasure, or rather a printed court of honour, read the Countesse of Pembrookes Arcadia, a gallant legendary, full of pleasurable accidents and profitable discourses, for three thinges especially very notable: for amorous courting (he was young in yecres); for sage counselling (he was ripe in judgement); and for valorous fighting (his foveraine profession was armes); and delightfull pastime by way of pastorall exercises, may passe for the fourth. He that will loove, let him learne to loove of him that will teach him to live, and furnish him with many pithy and effectuall instructions, delectably interlaced by way of proper descriptions of excellent perfonages, and common narrations of other notable occurrences; in the veine of Salust, Livy, Cornelius Tacitus, Justine, Eutropius, Philip de Comines, Guicciardine, and the most sententious historians that have powdred their stile with the salt of discretion, and seasoned their judgement with the leaven of experience. There want not

some futtle stratagems of importance, and some politike secretes of privitie ; and he that would skillfully and bravely manage his weapon with a cunning fury, may finde lively precepts in the gallant examples of his valiantest duellists ; especially of Palladius and Daiphantus, Zelmane and Amphialus, Phalantus and Amphialus ; but chiefly of Argalus and Amphialus, Pyrocles and Anaxius, Musidorus and Amphialus, whose lusty combats may seeme heroicall monomachies. And that the valor of such redoubted men may appeere the more conspicuous and admirable by comparison and interview of their contraries, smile at the ridiculous encounters of Dametas and Dorus, of Dametas and Clinias : and ever when you thinke upon Dametas, remember the confuting champion, more surquidrous then Anaxius, and more absurd then Dametas ; and if I should alwayes hereafter call him Dametas, I should fitt him with a name as naturally proper unto him as his owne. Gallant gentlemen, you that honor vertue, and would enkindle a noble courage in your mindes to every excellent purpose, if Homer be not at hand (whome I have often tearmed the Prince of Poets, and the Poet of Princes) you may read his furious Iliads and cunning Odysses in the brave adventures of Pyrocles and Musidorus ; where Pyrocles playeth the dowty fighter, like Hector, or Achilles ; Musidorus, the valiant captaine, like Pandarus, or Diomedes ; both the famous errant knightes like Æneas, or Ulysses. Lord ! what would himselfe have prooved in fine, that was the gentleman of curtesy, the esquier of industry, and the knight of valour at those yeeres ? Live ever, sweete booke ! the silver image of his gentle witt, and the golden pillar of his noble courage ; and ever notify unto the worlde, that

thy writer was the secretary of eloquence, the breath of the Muses, the hoony-bee of the dayntiest flowers of witt and arte, the pith of morall and intellectuall vertues, the arme of Bellona in the field, the tounge of Suada in the chamber, the spirite of practife *in esse*, and the paragon of excellency in print. And now, whiles I consider what a trompet of honour Homer hath bene to sturre-up many woorthy princes, I cannot forget the woorthy prince that is a Homer to himselfe, a golden spurre to nobility, a scepter to vertue, a verdure to the spring, a sunne to the day; and hath not onely translated the two divine poems of Salustius du Bartas, his heavenly Urany, and his hellish Furies, but hath readd a most valorous Martiall lecture unto himselfe in his owne victorious *Lepanto*, a short, but heroicall worke, in meeter, but royal meeter, fitt for a Davids harpe. Lepanto, first the glory of Christendome against the Turke, and now the garland of a soveraine crowne. When young kings have such a care of their flourishing prime, and, like Cato, are ready to render an accompt of their vacant howers, as if April were July, and May their August, how should gentlemen of yeeres employ the golden talent of their industry and travaile? with what fervency, with what vigour, with what zeale, with what incessant and indefatigable endeavour? Phy upon fooleries! there be honourable woorkes to doe, and notable woorkes to read. The aforementioned Bartas (whome elsewhere I have stiled the Treasurer of Humanity and the Jeweller of Divinity) for the highnesse of his subject, and the majesty of his verse nothing inferiour unto Dante, (whome some Italians preferre before Virgil, or Homer) a right inspired and enravished poet; full of chofen, grave, profound, venerable, and stately matter;

even in the next degree to the sacred and reverend stile of heavenly divinity it selfe: in a manner the onely poet whome Urany hath voutsafed to laureate with her owne heavenly hand, and worthy to bee alleadged of divines and counsellours, as Homer is quoted of philosophers and oratours. Many of his solemne verses are oracles; and one Bartis, that is, one French Salomon, more weighty, in stern and mighty counsell, then the Seaven Sages of Greece. Never more beauty in vulgar languages, but his stile addeth favour and grace to beauty; and in a goodly boddy representeth a puissant soule. How few verses carry such a personage of state, or how few argumentes such a spirite of majesty! Or where is the divine instincte that can sufficiently commend such a volume of celestially inspiration? what a judgement hath the noble youth, the harvest of the spring, the sapp of Apollos tree, the diademe of the Muses, that leaveth the enticingest flowers of delite, to reape the maturest fruites of wisedome? Happy plants, that speedily shew forth their generous nature! and a soveraigne good possesseth those worthy mindes that suffer not their affections to be inveigled or entangled with any unworthy thought. Great exercises become great personages: as the magnes approoveth his nobility in commaunding iron, and taming the sea; baser, or meaner pastimes belong unto meaner persons, as jett discovereth his gentry in drawing chaffe, haire, and such trifles. A meete qualitie for jett, or a pretty feate for amber, to juggle chaffe, festues, or the like weighty burdens; but excellent mindes are employed like the noble magnes, and ever conversant either in effecting, or in perusing, or in penning excellent workes. It were an impossible attempte to do right unto the great

capitaine, Monsieur de la Noë, and the brave soldiour, the French king himselfe, two terrible thunderboltes of warre, and two impetuous whirlwinds of the field, whose writings are like their actions, resolute, effectually, valiant, politique, vigorous, full of æry and fiery spirite, honourable, renowned wherefoever valour hath a mouth, or vertue a pen. Could the warlike horse speake as he can runne and fight, he would tell them, they are hoat knightes; and could the bluddy sword write as it can sheare, it would dedicate a volume of fury unto the one, and a monument of victory unto the other. Albeit men should be malicious or forgetfull (spite is malicious, and ingratitude forgetfull) yet prowesse hath a cloven tounge, and teacheth admiration in a fiery language to pleade the glorious honour of improved valiancy.

Some accuse their destiny; but blessed key that openeth such lockes, and lucky, most lucky fortune, that yeeldeth such vertue. Brave chivalry, a continuall witnesse of their valour and terribility in warre, and gallant industry, the daily bread of their life, in peace or truce. Report, shining sunne, the dayes-worke of the king; and, burning candle, relate his nightes studdy; and both ridd me of an endlesse labour. For who ever prayfed the wonders of Heaven?

And what an infinite course were it, to runne thorough the particular commendations of the famous redoubted actors, or the notable pregnant writers of this age, even in the most puissant, heroically, and argonautically kinde!

Nimble *Entelechy* hath been a stranger in some countries, albeit a renowned citizen of Greece, and a free denizen of Italy, Spaine, Fraunce, and Germany; but welcome the most naturall inhabitant of the world! the saile of the ship.

the flight of the bowe, the shott of the gunne, the wing of the eagle, the quintessence of the minde, the course of the sunne, the motion of the heavens, the influence of the starres, the heate of the fire, the lightnesse of the ayer, the swiftnesse of the winde, the streame of the water, the frutefulnesse of the earth, the singularity of this age; and thanke thy most-vigorous selfe for so many precious workes of divine furie, and powerable consequence, respectively comparable with the richest treasuries and bravest armories of antiquitie. Thrise-happie, or rather a thousand times happie creature, that with most advantage of all honorable opportunities, and with the extremest possibilitie of his whole powers, inward or outward, emploie the most excellent excellencie of humane or divine nature! Other secretes of nature and arte deserve an high reputation in their severall degrees, and may challenge a soverain entertainment in their speciall kinds; but Entelechy is the myserie of mysteries under heaven, and the head-spring of the powerfulest vertues that divinitie infuseth, humanitie imbraceth, philosophie admireth, wisedome practiseth, industrie improveth, valour extendeth, or he conceived, that conceiving the wonderfull faculties of the mind, and astonished with the incredible force of a ravished and enthusiastically spirite, in a profound contemplation of that elevate and transcendent capacitie (as it were in a deepe ecstasie, or seraphicall vision), most pathetically cryed out, *ô magnum miraculum Homo!* No marvel, ô great miracie, and ô most powerful Entelechy! though thou seemest a pilgrim to Dametas, that art the familiar spirite of Musidorus; and what wonder, though he impeach thy estimation, that despiseth the graces of God, floweth the constellations of heaven, frumpeth the opera-

tions of nature, mocketh the effectuallest and avayllablest arts, disdayneth the name of industrie or honesty, scorneth whatsoever may appeare vertuous, fawneth onely upon his owne conceits, claweth only his owne favorits, and quippeth, bourdeth, girdeth, affeth the excellentest writers, of whatsoever note, that tickle not his wanton sence. Nothing memorable or remarkable with him, that feasteth not the riotous appetite of the ribald, or the humorous conceit of the phantast. It is his S. Fame to be the infamy of learning; his reformation, to be the corruption of his reader; his felicitie, to be the miserie of youth; his health, to be the scurse of the citie, the scabbe of the universitie, the bile of the realme; his salvation, to be the damnation of whatsoever is termed good, or accounted honest. Sweet gentlemen, and flourishing youthes, ever aime at the right line of arte and vertue, of the one for knowledge, of the other for valour; and let the crooked rectifie itselfe. Resolution wandreth not, like an ignorant traveller, but in every enterprise, in every affaire, in every studdie, in every cogitation levelleth at some certaintie; and alwayes hath an eye to use, an eare to good report, a regard to worth, a respect to assurance, and a reference to the end. He that erreth, erreth against truth and himselfe; and he that sinneth, sinneth against God and himselfe: he is none of my charge; it suffiseth me to be the curate of myne owne actions, the master of mine owne passions, the frend of my frends, the pittier of my enemies, the loover of good witts and honest mindes, the affectionate servant of artes and vertues, the humble oratour of noble valour, the commender of the foresaid honourable writinges, or any commendable workes. Reason is no mans tyrant, and dutie every mans vassall that

deserveth well. Would this pen were worthy to be the flave of the worthiest actours, or the bondman of the above-mentioned, and the like important autours! Such mercuriall and martiall discourfes, in the active and chivalrous veine, pleade their owne eternall honour, and write everlasting fhame in the forehead of a thousand frivolous, and ten thousand phantafticall pamphlets. I would to Chrift some of them were but idle toyes, or vayne trifles! but impuritie never prefumed fo much of impuritie, and licentious follie by priviledge, lewd ribaldrie by permiffion, and rank villanie by connivence are become famous autours; not in a popular ftate or a petty-principalitie, but in a foverain monarchie, that tendereth politique government, and is to fortifie itfelfe againft forrein hoftilitie. If wifedome fay not, Phie for fhame! and autoritie take not other order in convenient time, who can tell what generall plague may enfue of a fpéciall infection? or when the kinges-evill is past cure, who can fay, we will now heale it? The baddeft weede groweth fafteft, and no gangrene fo pregnantly difpreddeth itfelfe as riott. And what riott fo peftiferous as that which in fugred baites prefenteth moft poisonous hookes? Sir Skelton and Mafter Scoggin were but innocents to Signior Capricio and Monsieur Madneffe, whose peftilent canker scorneth all the medicine of earth or heaven.

My writing is but a private note for the publike advertisement of fome fewe, whose youth asketh instruction, and whose frailtie needeth admonition. In the cure of a canker, it is a generall rule with furgeons, it never perfectly healeth, unleffe the rootes and all be utterly extirped, and the flefhe regenerate. But the foundeft principle is, *principiis obfta*; and it goeth beft with them that never knewe what a canker or leper meant.

I still hoped for some graffes of better fruite; but this grand confuter of my letters and all honestie still proceedeth from worse to worse, from the wilding-tree to the withie, from the dogge to the goate, from the catt to the swine, from Primerose hill to Colman hedge; and is so rooted in deepe vanitie that there is no ende of his profound follie; which deserveth a more famous encomiasticall oration then Erasmus renowned follie, and more gloriously disdained any cure then the goute. I may answer his hoat raving in cold termes, and convince him of what notorious falsehood, or villanie I can; but see the franke spirite of a full stomack; and who ever was so parlously matched? Were not my simplicitie, or his omnifufficiencie, exceeding great, I had never bene thus terrible overchallenged. *Gabriel, if there be any witt or industrie in thee, now I will dare it to the uttermost: write of what thou wilt, in what language thou wilt, and I will confute and answere it. Take truthes part, and I will prove truth to be no truth, marching out of thy dounge-voiding mouth;* and so forth in the braving tenour of the same redoutable stile. Good gentlemen, you see the sweet disposition of the man; and neede no other window into the closet of his conscience, but his owne glosse upon his owne text. Whatsoever poore I say, in any matter, or in any language, albeit truth averr and justifie the same, he will flatly denie and confute, even bicause I say it; and onely bicause, in a frolick and dowie jollitie, he will have the last word of me. His grammer is his catechisme: *Si ais, nego*: his stomack, his dictionarie in any language, and his quarrell his logique in any argument: *Lucian, Julian, Aretin, I protest; were you ought else but abhominable Atheists, that I would obstinately defende you, onely bicause*

Laureate Gabriel articles against you. Were there not otherwise a marvelous oddes, and incomprehensible difference betwixt our habilities, he would never dare me, like a bold Pandare, with such stout challenges and glorious protestations; but singular wittes have a great advantage of simple men, and cunning falsehood is a mightie confuter of plaine truth.

No such champion as he that fighteth obstinately with the target of confidence, and the long-sword of impudence. If any thing extraordinary emproveth valour it is confidence; and if any thing miraculously singularizeth witt it is impudence. Distrust is a naturall foole, and modestie an artificiall foole; he that will exploite wondermentes and karrie all before him like a sweep-stake, must have a hart of iron, a forehead of brasse, and a toung of adamant. Pelting circumstances marre brave executions; looke into the proceedings of the greatest doers, and what have they more then other men, but audacitie and fortune?

*Audendum est aliquid, vinclis et carcere dignum,
Si vis esse aliquid.*

Simplicitie may have a gesse at the principles of the world, and Nashe affecteth to seeme a compound of such elementes; as bold as æger, and as æger as a mad dogge. He will confute me, bicause he will; and he can conquer me, because he can. If I come upon him with a gentle reply, he will welcome me with a fierce rejoynder; for any my brieve triplication, he will provide a quadruplication at large, and so forth in *infinitum*, with an undauntable courage, for he sweareth *he will never leave me as long as he is hable to lift a penne*. Twentie such famous depositions

proclaime his dowie resolution, and indefatigable hand at a pight field. Were I to begin agayne, or cold I handfomely devise to give him the cleanly flipp, I would never deale with a sprite of Coleman hedge, or a may-lord of Primerofe hill, that hath all humours in his liverie, and can put confcience in a vices coate. Na, hee will atchieve impossibilities, and in contempt of my simplicitie, proove truth a counterfaiēt, and himselfe a true witnesse of falsest lyes. But Lord! that so invincible a gentleman should make so solemne account of confuting, and reconfuting a person of so little worth in his valuation! Sweet man, what should you thinke of trubling your-selfe with so tedious a course, when you might so blithly have taken a quicker order, and may yet proceede more compendiously? It had bene a worthy exploit, and befeeming a witt of supererogation, to have dipped a fopp in a goblet of *rennish wine*, and naming it Gabriel, (for you are now growne into great familiaritie with that name) to have devoured him upp at one bit; or taking a *pickle herring* by the throte, and christening it Richard (for you can christen him at your pleasure) to have swallowed him downe with a stomack. Did you never heare of detestable Jewes, that made a picture of Christ, and then buffeted, cuggelled, scourged, crucified, stabbed, pierced, and mangled the same most unmercifully? Now you have a patterne, I doubt not but you can with a dexteritie chopp off the head of a dead honey-bee, and boast you have stricken John as dead as a doore nayle. Other spoyle, or victorie (by the leave of the foresaid redoubted daring) will proove a busie peece of worke for the sonne of a mule, a rawe grammarian, a brabbling sophister, a counterfaiēte cranke, a stale rakehell, a piperly rymer, a

stump-worne railer, a dodkin autor, whose two swordes are like the hornes of an hodmandod ; whose courage, like the furie of a gad-bee, and whose surmounting braverie, like the wings of a butterfly. I take no pleasure to call thee an affe, but thou proovest thi-felse a haddock : and although I say not, Thou art a foole, yet thou wilt needs bewray thy diet, and disgorge thy stomack of the lobster and coddesshed, wherewith thou didst englutt thifelse, since thy notorious surfett of pickle-herring and dog-fish. Thou art neither *Dorbell*, nor *Duns*, nor *Thomas of Aquine* : they were three sharp-edged and quick-fented schoolemen, full of nimble witt, and intricate quiddities in their auguing kinde, especially *Duns* and *Thomas* ; but by some of thy cavilling *Ergos*, thou shouldest seeme to be the spawne of Javell, or Tartaret ; and as very a crabfish at an *ergo* as ever crawled over Carters Logique, or the *Posteriorums* of *Johannes de Lapide*. When I looke upon thy first page (as I daily behold that terrible emprefe for a recreation) still methinkes there should come flushing out the great atlas of logique, and astronemie, that supported the orbes of the heavens by art : or the mightie Hercules of rhetorique and poetrie, that with certaine marvelous fine, and delicate chaines, drew after him the vassals of the world by the eares. But examin his futtellest *ergos*, and tast his nappiest invention, or daintiest elocution, (he that hath nothing else to do, may hold himfelse occupied) and art will soone finde the huge Behemoth of conceit, to be the sprat of a pickle herring ; and the hideous leviathan of vainglorie, to be a shrimpe in witt, a periwinkle in art, a dandiprat in industrie, a dodkin in valu, and such a toy of toyes, as every right schollar hisseth at in judgement, and every fine gentleman maketh the

object of his scorne. He can raile: (what mad Bedlam cannot raile?) but the favour of his railing is grosely fell, and smelleth noyfomly of the pumpe, or a nastier thing. His gayest floorishes are but Gascoignes Weedes, or Tarletons trickes, or Greenes cranks, or Marlowes bravados; his jestes, but the dregges of common scurrilitie, or the shreds of the Theater, or the of-scouring of new pamphlets: his freshest nippitatie, but the froth of stale inventions, long-since lothsome to quick tastes; his shroving ware, but lenten stuff, like the old pickle herring; his lustiest verdure, but ranke ordure, not to be named in civilitie or rhetorique; his only art, and the vengeable drift of his whole cunning, to mangle my sentences, hack my arguments, chop and change my phrascs, wrinch my wordes, and hale every syllable most extremely, even to the disjoynting and maiming of my whole meaning. O times! ô pastimes! ô monstrous knaverie! The residue, whatsoever, hath nothing more in it, then is usuallie in every ruffianly copesmate that hath bene a grammar schollar, readeth riotous bookes, hanteth roisterly companie, delighteth in rude scoffing, and karrieth a desperate minde. Let him be thorowly perused by any indifferent reader whomsoever, that can judiciously discern what is what, and will uprightly censure him according to his skill, without partialitie *pro* or *contra*, and I dare undertake, he will affirme no lesse, upon the credit of his judgement; but will definitively pronounce him the very baggage of new writers. I could nominate the person that, under his hand-writing, hath stiled him the cockish challenger, the lewd scribler, the offal of corruptest mouthes, the draff of filthiest pennes, the bag-pudding of fooles, and the very pudding-pittes of the wife or honest. He might have read

of foure notable thinges, which many a jollie man weeneth he hath at will, when he hath nothing lesse:—much knowledge; sound wisedome; great power, and many frends. And he might have heard of other foure speciall thinges, that worke the destruction, or confusion of the forwardest practitioners:—a headlong desire to know much hastily; a greedie thirst to have much suddainly; an overweening conceit of themselves, and a furly contempt of other. I could peradventure arread him his fortune in a fatall booke, as verifiable, as peremptorie; but I loove not to insult upon miserie, and destinie is a judge, whose sentence needeth no other execution but itselfe. No prevention, but deepe repentance; an impossible remedy, where deepe obstinacie is grounded, and high presumption aspireth above the moone. Hawtie minds may stie aloft, and hasten their owne overthrow; but it is not the wainfcott forehead of a Rudhuddibras, that can arreare such an huge opinion, as himselfe in a strong conceit of a mighty conception, seemeth to travaill withall; as it were with a flying Bladude, attempting wonderments in the ayre, or a Simon Magus, experimenting impossibilities from the top of the Capitoll. He must either accomplish some greater work of supererogation, with actual atchievement (that is now a principall point) or immortalize himselfe the prowdest vaine fott that ever abused the world with foppish ostentation; not in one or two pages, but in the first, the last, and every leafe of his Strange Newes. For the end is like the beginning, the midst like both, and every part like the whole. Railing, railing, railing; bragging, bragging, bragging; and nothing else, but fowle railing upon railing, and wayne bragging upon bragging; as rudely, grosely, odiously, filthily, beastly,

as ever shamed print. Unlesse he meant to sett upp a railing schoole, and to reade a publike lecture of bragging, as the onely regall professoour of that, and that facultie, now other shiftes begin to sayle: I wonder his owne mouth can abide it without many a phah! You have heard some worthie premisses; behold a brave conclusion:

*Awaite, the world, the tragedy of wrath;
What next I paint shall tread no common path.*

With an other double *aut*, for a gallant embleme, or a glorious farewell, *Aut nunquam tentes, aut perfice*; subscribed with his owne hand, *Thomas Nash*. Not expect, or attend, but *a wait*: not some few, or the citty, or the university, or this land, or Europe, *but the World*: not a comedy, or a declamation, or an invective, or a satire, or any like elenctical discourse, but a *tragedy*, and the very *Tragedy of Wrath*, that shall dash the direfullest Tragedies of Seneca, Euripedes, or Sophocles, out of conceit. *The next peece*, not of his rhetorique, or poetry, but of his *painture*, shall *not treade* to way the Poules, or Westminster, or the Royall Exchange; but at least shall perfect the Venus face of Apelles, or sett the world an everlasting sample of inimitable artificiality. Other mens writing in prose, or verse, may plodd on, as before; but *his painting* will now *tread a rare Path*, and by the way bestow a new lesson uppon rhetorique, how to continue a metaphor, or uphold an allegory with advantage. *The treading of that rare path*, by that exquisite *painting*, (his wookes are miracles; and his *painting* can *treade*, like his dauncing or frisking, *no common, but a proper path*) who expecteth not with an attentive, a serviceable, a coovetous, a longing expectation? *A wait*

world, and Apelles tender thy most affectionate devotion, to learne a wonderfull peece of curious workmanship, when it shall please his next *painting to tread the path* of his most singular singularity. Meanwhile it hath pleased soome sweete witts of my acquaintance, (whome heaven hath baptized the spirites of harmony, and the mufes have enterteyned for their paramours) to reacquite sonnets with sonnets, and to snibb the Thrafonicall rimester with angelical meeter, that may haply appeere in fitt place, and finely discover young Apuleius in his ramping roabe; the fourth furie in his tragicall pageant, the new sprite in his proper haunt, or buttry; and the confuting divell in the horologe. One she and two he's have vowed they will pompe *his railing ink-horne* as dry as ever was Holborne Conduit; and squise *his craking quill* to as emptie a sponge as any in Hosier Lane. Which of you, gallant gentlemen, hath not stripped *his stale jestes* into their thredbare ragges; or so feldome as an hundred times pittied his creast-falne stile, and his socket-worne invention? Who would have thought, or could have imagined, to have found the witt of Pierce so starved and clunged: the conceit of an adversarie, so weatherbeaten and tired: the learning of a schollar, so pore-blind and lame: the elocution of the Divels Oratour, so lanke, so wan, so meager, so blunt, so dull, so fordead, so gastly, where the masculine furie meant to play his grisliest and horriblest part? Welfare a good visage in a bad cause, or farwell hope, the kindest coosener of forlorne harts! The desperate minde, that assayeth impossibilities in nature, or undertaketh incredibilities in art, must be content to speed thereafter. When every attempt faileth in performance, and every extremitie foileth the enterpriser, at-last even impudencie itselfe

must be faine to give over in the plaine felde, and never yeeld credit to the word of that most credible gentlewoman, if the very brazen buckler proove not finally a notorious Dash-Nash. He summed all in a brieft, but materiall summe; that called *the old Affe*, the great A, and the *est amen* of the *new supererogation*. And were I here compelled to dispatch abruptly (as I am presently called to a more commodious exercife) should I not sufficiently have discharged my taske, and plentifully have commended *that famous creature*, whose prayse the title of this pamphlet professeth? He that would honor Alexander, may crowne him the great A. of puissance; but Pyrrhus, Hanniball, Scipio, Pompey, Cæsar, divers other mightie conquerours, and even som moderne worthies would disdaine to have him sceptred the *est Amen* of valour. What a brave and incomparable Alexander is that great A, that is also the *est amen* of supererogation; a more miraculous and impossible peece of worke, then the downtiest puissance, or worthiest valour in the old or new world! Shall I say blessed, or peerlesse young Apuleius, that from the swathing bandes of his infancie in print, was suckled of the sweetest nurfes, lulled of the deereft groomes, cockered of the finest minions, cowed of the daintiest paramours, hugged of the enticingest darlings, and more then tenderly tendered of the most delitious muses, the most amiable graces, and the most powerful vertues of the said unmatched great A, the graund founder of supererogation, and sole patron of such meritorious clients. As for other remarkable particulars in the Straunge Newes; ink is so like ink, spite so like spite, impudencie so like impudencie, brocage so like brocage, and Tom-Penniles now so like Papp-hatchet, when the time was, that I neede but

overrun an old censure of the one, by way of a new application to the other. The notes of Martinisme appertaine unto those whom they concerne: Pierce would laugh to be charged with Martinisme, or any religion, though Martin himfelfe, for a challenging, ruffling, and railing stile, not such a Martin. Two contraries; but two such contraries as can teach extremities to play the contraries, and to confound themselves.

Papp-hatchet desirous, for his benefit, to currie favour with a noble earle, and, in defect of other meanes of commendation, labouring to insinuate himfelfe by smooth glossing and counterfait suggestions, (it is a courtly-feate, to snatch the least occasionet of advantage with a nimble dexteritie) some yeares since provoked me, to make the best of it, inconsideratly; to speake like a frend, unfrendly; to say, as it was, intolerably; without private cause, or any reason in the world; (for in truth I looved him, in hope prayfed him, many wayes favored him, and never any way offended him;) and notwithstanding that spitefull provocation, and even that odious threatening of ten yeares provision, he had ever passed untouched with any fillable of revenge in print, had not Greene, and this dog-fish, abhominably misused the verbe passive; as should appeare, by his procurement, or encouragement, assuredly most undeserved, and most injurious. For what other quarrel could Greene, or this dogge-fish, ever picke with me, whom I never so much as twitched by the sleeve before I founde myfelfe and my dearest frendes unsufferably quipped in most contumelious and opprobrious termes. But now there is no remedie: have amongst you, blind harpers of the printing house! for I feare not six hundred crowders, were all your wittes assembled in

one capp of vanitie, or all your galles united in one bladder of choler. I have loft more labour then the tranfcripting of this cenfure, which I dedicate neither to lord nor lady, but to truth and æquitie, on whose foverain patronage I relye.

*An Advertifement for Pap-hatchet, and Martin
Mar-prelate.*

Pap-hatchet (for the name of thy good nature is pittifully grown out of requeft), thy olde acquaintance in the Savoy, when young Euphues hatched the egges that his elder freendes laide, (furely Euphues was fomeway a pretty fellow : would God, Lilly had alwaies bene Euphues, and never Pap-hatchet !) that old acquaintance, now fomewhat ftraungely faluted with a new remembrance, is neither lullabied with thy sweete Papp, nor fcarre-crowed with thy fower hatchet. And although in felfe-conceit thou knoweft not thy felfe, yet in experience thou mighteft have known him that can unbutton thy vanity and unlase thy folly ; but in pittie spareth thy childifh fimplicities, that in judgement fcorneth thy roifterly bravery, and never thought fo bafely of thee, as fince thou began'ft to difguife thy witt, and difgrace thy arte with ruffianly foolery. He winneth not moft abroad, that weeneth moft at home ; and in my poore fancy, it were not greatly amiffe, even for the perteft and gayeft companions, (notwithftanding whatfoever courtly holly-water, or plaufible hopes of preferment) to deigne their olde familiars the continuance of their former courtesies, without contempt of the barraineft giftes, or impeachment of the meaneft perfons. The fimpleft man in a parifh is a fhrewd foole, and humanity an image of divinity, that pulleth

downe the hawty, and setteth up the meeke. Euphues, it is good to bee merry, and Lilly, it is good to be wise, and Papp-hatchet, it is better to loose a new jest then an olde frend that can cramme the capon with his owne papp, and hewe downe the woodcocke with his owne hatchet. Bolde men, and marchant venturers have sometime good lucke; but happ-hazard hath oftentimes good leave to befhrow his owne pate, and to imbarke the hardy foole in the famous shipp of wisemen. I cannot stand nosing of candlestickes, or euphuing of similes, *alla Savoica*: it might happily be done with a trice; but every man hath not the guist of *Albertus Magnus*: rare birdes are dainty, and they are queint creatures, that are priviledged to create new creatures. When I have a mint of precious stones, and straunge foules, beastes, and fishes of mine owne coyning, (I could name the party that, in comparison of his owne naturall inventions, tearmed Pliny a barraine woombe,) I may peradventure bleffe you with your owne crosses, and pay you with the usury of your owne coyne. In the meane while beare with a plaine man, as plaine as olde Accursius, or Barthol de Saxoferrato, that wil make his censure good upon the carrion of thy unfavory and stincking pamphlett; a fitt booke to bee joyned with Scoggins woorkes, or the French Mirrour of Madnesse. The very title discovereth the wisedome of the young man, as an olde fox not long since bewrayed himselfe by a flap of his taile; and a lion, they say, is soone descried by his pawe, a cocke by his combe, a goate by his bearde, an asse by his eare, a wise man by his tale, an artist by his tearmes.

*Papp with an hatchet: alias, a Figg for my God-sonne:
or, cracke me this nutt: or, a country Cuffe,*

*that is, A sound boxe on the care, & cætera.
 Written by one that dares call a Dog a Dog.
 Imprinted by John Anoke, and John Asile, for the Bayly
 of Withernam, Cum privilegio perennitatis,
 And are to be sold at the signe of the Crabtree Cudgell in
 Thwacke-coate Lane.*

What devise of Martin, or what invention of any other, could have sett a fairer orientall starre upon the forehead of that foule libell? Now you see the brande, and know the Blackamore by his face, turne over the leafe, and by the wittinesse of his first sentence aime at the rest. Milke is like milke; hoony like hoony; papp like papp, and hee like himselfe; in the whole a notable ruffler, and in every part a dowty braggard. *Roome for a roister; so thats well said; itch a little further for a good fellow: now have at you all, my gaffers of the rayling religion: tis I that must take you a pegg lower. Ile make such a splinter runne into your wittes,* and so forth in the same lusty tenour. A very artificiall beginning, to moove attention or to procure good-liking in the reader, unlesse he wrote onely to roister-doisters, and hacksters, or at least to jesters, and vices. Oh! but in his preamble to the indifferent reader he approveth himselfe a marveilous discreet, and modest man of the sobrest fort, were he not provoked in conscience to aunfweare contrary to his nature and manner. You may see how grave men may be made light to defend the Church. I perceive they were wise, that, at riotous times, when youth was wantonneft, and knavery lustiest, as in Christmas, at Shrofetide, in May, at the ende of Harvest, and by such wilde fittes created a certaine extraordinary officer, called a Lord of Misrule, as a needefull governour, or dictatour, to set thinges in order,

and to rule unruly people; with whome otherwise there were no Ho. So, when Revell-rout beginneth to be a current autour, or Hurly-burly a busy promotour, *roome for a roister*, that will bore them thorough the noses with a cushion; that will bung-up their mouthes with a collyrium of all the stale jestes in a country; that will suffer none to play the rex but himselfe. For that is the very depth of his plot; and who ever began with more roisterly tearmes, or proceeded with more ruffianly scoffes, or concluded with more haire-brain'd trickes, or wearied his reader with more thread-bare jestes, or tired himselfe with more weather-beaten cranckes? What scholler, or gentleman, can reade such alehouse and tinkery stuffe without blushing? They were much deceived in him at Oxford, and in the Savoy, when Master Abfolon lived, that tooke him onely for a dapper and deft companion, or a pert conceited youth, that had gathered together a fewe prettie sentences, and could hand-somly helpe young Euphues to an old *simile*, and never thought him any such mighty doer at the sharpe. But *Ile, Ile*, is a parlous fellow at a *hatchett*: *hesse like Death, hele spare none*: *hele shewe them an Irish tricke*: *hele make them weepe Irish*: *hesse good at the sticking blow*: *his posie, what care I?* *Vie stabbes*, good ecclesiasticall learning in his Apologie, and good Christian charitie in his Homilie. Muster his arrant braveries together, and where such a terrible killcowe, or such a vengeable bull-beggar to deal with-all? O dreadfull dubble V! that carriest the dubble stoccado in thy penne, what a dubble stabber woldest thou be, were thy hand as tall a fellow as thy hart, or thy witt as lustie a ladd as thy minde! Other good fellowes may tell tales of Gawin: thou art Sir Gawin revived, or rather Terrour in

person. Yet shall I put a beane into Gawins ratling scull, and tell thee where thy flashing long-sword commeth short? Thou professest railing, and emproovest thifselfe in very deede an egregious railer, as disdaining to yeelde unto any he or she scolde of this age: but what faith my particular analysis? Dubble V is old-excellent at his *cornucopie*, and, I warrant you, never to seeke in his horne-booke; but debarre thoffame horefon tales of a tubb, and put him beside his horning, gaming, fooling, and knaving, and he is no boddy, but a fewe pilfred *similes*, a little pedanticall Latin, and the highest pitch of his witt Bulles motion, *alias* the hangmans apron. His ryme forestalled by Elderton, that hath ballats lying a steepe in ale: his reason, by a Cambrige wagg, a twiggig sophister, that will *ergo* Martin into an ague, and concludeth peremptorily, therefore Tiburne must be furr'd with Martins: nothing left for the third disputer, but railing thorough all the moods and figures of knaverie, as they come fresh and fresh to his hand. All three jumpe *in eodem tertio*: nothing but a certaine exercise, termed hanging, will serve their turne; (if it be his destinie, what remedie?) they must draw cuttes who shall play the hangerman, and that is the argument of the tragedie, and the very papp of the hatchet. These are yet all the common-places of his great paper-boke, and the whole inventarie of his witt, though in time he may haply learne to play at ninehole-nidgets, or to canuas a liverie flowt thorough all the predicaments of the fower and twentie orders. When I first tooke a glancing vewe of *Ile, Ile, Ile*, and durst scarcely be so hardy to looke the hatchet in the face, methought his imagination was hedded like a Saracen; his stomach bellying, like the great globe of Orontius; and his breath,

like the blast of Boreas in the great mapp of Mercator. But when we began to renue our old acquaintance, and to shake the handes of discontinued familiaritie, alas, good gentleman! his mandillion was over-cropped; his witt paunched, like his wives spindle; his art shanked, like a lath; his conceit as lank as a shotten herring; and that fame blustering eloquence, as bleake and wan as the picture of a forlorne loover. Nothing but pure mammaday, and a fewe morsels of fly-blowne Euphuisme, somewhat nicely minced for puling stomackes. But there be painters enough, though I goe roundly to worke, and it is my onely purpose, to speake to the purpose. I long sithence founde by experience, how Dranting of verses, and Euphuing of sentences did edifie. But had I consulted with the prognostication of John Securis, I might peradventure have saved some loose endes for afterclapps. Now, his nephew Hatchet must be content to accept of such intertainment as he findeth.

It was Martins folly to begin that cutting vaine, some others oversight to continue it, and dubble Vs. triumph to set it agogg. If the world should applaude to such roister-doisterly vanity, (as impudency hath beene prettily suffered to sett-upp the creast of his vaine-glory) what good could grow of it, but to make every man madbrayned and desperate; but a generall contempt of all good order, in saying or dooing; but an universal topsy-turvy? He were a very simple oratour, a more simple politician, and a most simple devine, that should favour Martinizing; but had I bene Martin, (as for a time I was vainely suspected by such madd copesmates, that can surmize any thing for their purpose, howsoever unlikely or monstrous) I would have beene so farre from being mooved by such a fantastickall confuter,

that it should have beene one of my May-games, or August-triumphe, to have driven officials, commissaries, archdeacons, deanes, chauncellors, suffraganes, bishops, and archbishops (so Martin would have florished at the least) to entertaine such an odd light-headed fellow for their defence; a professed jester, a Hick-scorner, a scoff-maister, a playmunger, an interluder; once the foile of Oxford, now the stale of London, and ever the apesclogg of the presse, *cum privilegio perennitatis*. Had it not bene a better course to have followed Aristotles doctrine, and to have confuted levity with gravity, vanity with discretion, rashnes with advise, madnesse with sobriety, fier with water, ridiculous Martin with reverend Cooper? Especially in ecclesiasticall causes; where it goeth hard, when Scoggin, the joviall foole, or Skelton, the melancholy foole, or Elderton, the bibbing foole, or Will Sommer, the chollericke foole, must play the feate; and church-matters cannot be discuffed without rancke scurrillity, and, as it were, a synode of diapason fooles. Some few have a civill pleasant vaine, and a dainety splene without scandale: some such per case might have repayed the Marr-prelate home to good purpose; other obscenity, or vanity confuteth itselfe, and impeacheth the cause. As good forbear an irregular foole, as beare a foole heteroclitall; and better abide a comparative knave, that pretendeth religion, then suffer a knave superlative, that setteth cocke on hoope. Serious matters would be handeled seriously, not upon simplicity, but upon choice; not to flesh, or animate, but to disgrace, and shame levity. A glicking *pro*, and a frumping *contra*, shall have much-adoe to shake handes in the *ergo*. There is no ende of girdes and bobbes: it is found argumentes, and grounded authorities, that must strike the

definitive stroke, and decide the controversy with mutual satisfaction. Martin, bee wise, though Browne were a foole; and Papp-hatchet be honest, though Barrow be a knave: it is not your heaving, or hoising coile, that buildeth-upp the walles of the temple. Alas, poore, miserable, defolate, most woefull church, had it no other builders, but such architects of their owne fantasies, and such maisons of infinite contradiction! Time, informed by secrete intelligence or resolved by curious discovery, spareth no cost, or travaile, to prevent mischiefe, but employeth her two woorthy generals, Knowledge and Industry, to cleere the coast of vagarant errors in doctrine, and to scour the sea of roving corruptions in discipline. Roome was not reared-upp in one day; nor cannot be pulled downe in one day. A perfect ecclesiasticall discipline, or autentique pollicy of the Church, (that may avowe, I have neither more nor lesse then enough, but just the number, weight, and measure of exact government) is not the worke of one man whosoever, or of one age whatsoever: it requireth an incredible-great judgment; exceeding-much reading in ecclesiasticall histories, counsels, decrees, lawes; long and ripe practise in church-causes. Platformes offer themselves to every working conceit, and a few tables, or abridgements are soone despatched; but, whatsoever pretext may coulerably bee alledged, undoubtedly they attempt they know not what, and enterprife above the possibility of their reach, that imagine they can in a pamphlet, or two, contrive such an omni-sufficient and incorruptible method of ecclesiasticall government, as could not, by any private meditation or publike occasion, be found out, with the study or practise of fiftene hundred yeeres. I am not to dispute as a professed devine or to determine,

as a severe censour; but a scholler may deliver his opinion with reason, and a frend may lend his advise at occasion; especially when hee is urged to speake, or suspected for silence. They must licence mee to dissent from them, that autorise themselves to disagree from so many notable and woorthy men, in the common reputation of so long a space. They condemne superstitious and credulous simplicity; it were a fonde simplicity to defende it, where it swarveth from the trueth, or strayeth out of the way; but discretion can as little commend opiniotive and prejudicate assertions, that strive for a needeleffe and daungerous innovation. It is neither the excesse, nor the defect, but the meane, that edifyeth. Superstition and credulitie are simple creatures; but what are contempt and tumult? What is the principall cause of this whole Numantine Warre, but affectation of novelty without ground? If all without exception, from the very schollers of the primitive and heroical schoole, wanted knowledge or zeale, how rare and singular are their blessings that have both in so plentifull and incomparable measure! Assuredly there were many excellent witts, illuminate minds, and devout soules before them; if nothing matchable with them, what greater marvell in this age? Or if they were not rightly disciplined, that lived so vertuously and Christianly together, what an inestimable treasure is founde, and what a cleere fountaine of holy life! Where are godly minds become, that they embrace not that sacred societie? What aile religious handes, that they stay from building the Cittie of God? Can Platos Republique and Mores Utopia winne hartes, and cannot the heavenly Hierusalem conquer soules? Can there be a greater impietie then to hinder the rearing-up of those celestiall walles? Why

forgetteth the grose church that it ought to be the pure kingdome of heaven? To zeale even speede is delay, and a yeare an age. But how maturely, and judiciously some busie motions have bene considered-upon by their hoat sollicitours, it would not passe unexamined. A strong discipline standeth not upon feeble feete; and a weake foundation will never beare the weight of a mightie Hierusalem. The great shouldders of Atlas oftentimes shrinke and faint under the great burden of heaven. The tabernacle of Moses, the temple of Salomon, the golden age of the primitive church, and the silver regiment of Constantine, would be looked into with a sharper and a cleerer eye. The difference of commonwealthes, or regiments, requireth a difference of lawes and orders; and those lawes and orders are most soverain, that are most agreable to the regiment, and best proportioned to the commonwealth. The matter of elections and offices is a principall matter in question; and many, not onely ignorant or curious, but learned and considerate wits, have lost themselves, and founde error in the discourse of that subject? But how compendiously might it be concluded, that is so infinitely argued; or how quietly decided, that is so tumultuously debated! I relye not upon the uncertaintie of disputable rules, or the subtiltie of intricate arguments, or the ambiguitie of doubtfull allegations, or the casualtie of fallible experiments, but grounde my resolution upon the assurance of such politique and ecclesiasticall principles, as, in my opinion, can neither be deceived grossely, nor deceive dangerously. Popular elections and offices, as well in churches as in commonwealthes, are for popular states: monarchies, and aristocracies, are to celebrate their elections and offices according to their

forme of government, and the best correspondence of their states, civill and ecclesiasticall; and may justifie their good proceeding by good divinitie. As they gravely and religiously proved, that in the flourishing propagation, and mightie encrease of the Catholique Church under Princes, before, in, and after the Empire of Constantine, were driven to varie from some primitive examples; not by unlawfull corruption, as is ignorantly surmised, but by lawfull provision, according to the exigence of occasions, and necessitie of alteration in those overruling cases: as appeareth by pregnant evidence of ecclesiasticall histories, and canons wherewith they are to consult, that affect a deepe insight in the decision of such controversies, and not to leape at all adventures, before they have looked about them, as well backward as forward, and as well of the one side as of the other. Consideration is a good counsellour, and reading no badd remembrancer; especially, in the most essentiall common-places of doctrine, and the most important matters of government. Ignorance may someway be the father of zeale, as it was wont to be termed the moother of devotion; but blind men swallow-downe many flies, and none more, then many of them that imagin they know all, and conceit an absolute omni-sufficiencie in their owne platformes, with an univerfall contempt of whatsoever contradiction, speciall, or generall, moderne, or auncient, when undoubtedly they are to seeke in a thousand points of requisite, and necessarie consideration. Lord! that men should so please, and flatter themselves in their owne devises, as if none had eyes but they. God never bestowed his divine giftes in vayne: they are not so lightly to be rejected, that so gravely demeaned themselves, instructed their brethren, reclaimed infidels, con-

verted countryes, planted churches, confounded heretiques, and incessantly travailed in Gods causes, with the whole devotion of their soules, howsoever some can be content to thinke, than since the Apostles, none ever had the spirit of understanding, or the mindes of sincerity, but themselves. Pardon me, pure intelligences, and incorruptible mindes. The auncient fathers and doctours of the church wanted neither learning, nor judgment, nor conscience, nor zeale, as some of their Greeke and Latine woorkes very notably declare: (if they were blinde, happy men that see !) and what wiser senates, or hollier congregations, or any way more reverend assemblies, then some generall and some provinciall councils? Where they, to a superficiall opinion, seeme to sett-up a glosse against or beside the text, it would bee considered what their considerations were, and whether it can appeare that they, directly or indirectly, proceeded without a respective regard for the commonwealth, or a tender care of the church, or a reverend examination of that text. For I pray God we love the text no worfe from the bottome of our hartes, then some of them did. They are not the simplest, or dissoluteest men, that thinke discretion might have leave to cutt his coate according to his cloth ; and commend their humility, patience, wisdome, and whole conformity, that were ready to accept any requisite order not unlawfull, and to admitt any decent, or seemely rites of indifferent nature. Put the case just as it was then, and in those countries ; and what if some suppose, that even M. Calvin, M. Beza, M. Melvin, or M. Cartwright (notwithstanding their new defeignementes), being in the same estate wherein they were then, and in those countries, would have resolved no otherwise, in effect, then they determined. Or

if they did not so perfectly well, I pray God we may. Howbeit, none so fitt to reconcile contradictions, or to accord differences, as hee that distinguisheth times, places, occasions, and other swaying circumstances, high pointes in government, either civill or ecclesiasticall. As in the doubtfull paragraphs and canons of the law of man, so in the mysticall oracles of the law of God, *qui benè distinguit, benè docet*: in the one, when he useth no distinction but of the law, or some reason equipollent to the law; in the other, when he interpreteth the scripture by the scripture, either expressly by conference of text with text, or collectively by the rule of analogy. In cases indifferent, or arbitrary, what so equall in generall as indifferency; or so requisite in speciall as conformity to the positive lawe, to the custome of the countrey, or to the present occasion? To be perverse, or obstinate, without necessary cause, is a peevish folly; when by such a duetyfull and justifiable order of proceeding, as by a sacred league, so infinite variances and contentions may be compounded. To the cleane, all things are cleane. S. Paule, that layed his foundation like a wise architect, and was a singular frame of divinity, (omnisufficiently furnished to be a doctour of the nations, and a convertour of people) became all unto all, and, as it were, a Christian Mercury to winne some. Oh, that his knowledge, or zeale, were as ripe as his name! and I would to God some could learne to behave themselves toward princes and magistrates as Paul demeaned himselfe, not onely before the king Agrippa, but also before the twoo Romane procuratours of that province, Felix and Festus; whome he entreated in honourable termes, albeit ethnicke gouvernours. Were none more scrupulous then S. Paul, how easly and gratioufly might divers confutations

bee reconciled, that now rage like civill warres ! The chieft matter in question is no article of beliefe, but a point of pollicy, or government ; wherein a judicall equity being duely observed, what letteth but the particular lawes, ordinances, injunctions, and whole manner of jurisdiction, may rest in the disposition of soveraine autoritie ? Whose immediate, or mediate, actes are to be revered with obedience, not countermaunded with sedition, or controled with contention. He is a bold subject that attempteth to binde the handes of sacred maesty ; and they love controversies well, I trow, that call their princes proceedings into controversie. Altercations and paradoxes, aswell in discipline as in doctrine, were never so curiously curious, or so infinitely infinite ; but when all is done, and when innovation hath sett the best countenance of prooffe, or persuation upon the matter, kingdomes will stand, and free-citties must be content. Their courts are no presidents for royall courts ; their counsels no instructions for the counsels of kings, or queenes ; their consistories that would master princes, no informations for the consistories under princes ; their discipline, no canon, or platforme for soveraine government, either in causes temporall or spirituall. And can you blame them that marvell, how of all other tribunals, or benches, that Jewish Synedrion, or pontificall consistory, should so exceedingly grow in request, that put Christ himselfe to death, and was a whipp for his deereft apostles ? I am loth to enter the listes of argumentation, or discourse, with any obstinate minde, or violent witt, that weeneth his owne conceit a cleere sunne without eclipse, or a full moone without wanes ; but sith importunacy will never linne molesting Parliaments and princes with admonitions, advertisements, motions, petitions,

repetitions, follicitations, declamations, difcourfes, methods, flatteries, menaces, and all poffible instant meanes of enforcing and extorting the prefent practife of their incorruptible theorie, it would be fom-bodies tafke to hold them a little occupied, till a greater refolution begin to fubfcribe, and a furer provision to execute. May it, therefore, please the bufieft of thofe that debarre ecclefiaticall perfons of all civill jurifdiction, or temporall function, to confider how every pettie *parifh* in England, to the number of about 52,000, more or leffe, may be made a Jerufalem, or Metropolitan Sea, like the nobleft cittie of the Orient, (for fo Pliny calleth Jerufalem) how every *miniſter* of the fayd parifhes may be promoted to be an high prieft, and to have a pontificall confiftorie; how every *aſſiſtant* of that confiftorie may emprove himſelfe an honorable or worſhipfull ſenior, according to his reverend calling; (for not onely the princes of families, or the princes of tribes, but the princes of citties, or judges, the Decurions, the Quinquagenarians, the Centurions, the Chiliarkes, were inferiour officers to the ſeniors) how a *princely and capitall court*, and even the high counsell of parlament, or ſupreme tribunall of a royall cittie, (for there was no ſeniorie in Judæa, but at Jeruſalem, ſaving when the pro-conſul Gabinius in a Romane pollicy devided that nation into five parts, and appointed foure other conſiftories) how ſuch a princely and ſtately court ſhould be the patterne of a *presbitery in a poore parifh*: how the principalitie, or *pontificalitie of a miniſter*, according to the degenerate Sanedrim, ſhould be ſett upp, when the *lordſhip of a biſhop*, or archbiſhop, according to their poſition, is to be pulled downe; finally, how the *ſupremacie over kings* and emperours ſhould be taken from the higheſt

priest, or *Pope*, to be bestowed upon an *ordinarie minister*, or curate ; and how that minister should dispenſe with Aristotles *law of instruments*, *ἐν πρὸς ἐν*, or become more mighty then Hercules, that could not encounter *two charges at once* ; or at least how that civil court, that *meere civill court*, (for so it was, before it declined from the first institution, even as meerly civill as the Romane senate) should be transformed into a court *meerly ecclesiasticall*. When these points are considered, if withall it be determined by evident demonstration, as cleere as the sunne and as invincible as Gods-word, that whatsoever the Apostles did for their time is immutably perpetuall, and necessarie for all times ; and that nothing, by way of speciall respect or present occasion, is left to the ordinance, disposition, or provision of the Church, but the strict and precise practise of their primitive discipline, according to some precepts in S. Pauls Epistles, and a few examples in the Actes of the Apostles : *So be it*, must be the suffrage of us, that have no voyce in the Sanedrim. All is concluded in a fewe pregnant propositions : we shall not neede to trouble, or entangle our wittes with many articles, injunctions, statutes, or other ordinances ; the generall, provinciall, and episcopall counsels lost much good labour in their canons, decrees, and whatsoever ecclesiasticall constitutions : the workes of the fathers and doctours, howsoever auncient learned, or orthodox all, are little, or nothing worth : infinite studdies, writings, commentaries, treatises, conferences, consultations, disputations, distinctions, conclusions of the most notable schollers in Christendome, altogether superfluous. Well-worth a fewe resolute aphorismes, that dispatch more in a word then could be boulded-out in fifteen

hundred yeares ; and roundly determine all with an *upfy-downe*. No reformation without an *upfy-downe*. Indeepe, that is one of Machiavel's positions ; and feing it is prooved a peece of found doctrine, it must not be gain-sayd. Every head that hath a hand pull downe the pride of bishops, and set up the humilitie of ministers. Diogenes treade upon Platos pompe : an univerfall reformation be proclaimed with the founde of a Jewes trumpe : let the Pontificall Consistorie be erected in every parish : let the high priest, or archbishop of every parish be enstalled in Moses chaier, (it was Moses, not Aarons chayer, that they challenge in their senate, and he must be greater then Hercules that can fulfill both) : let the ministerie be a royall priesthood ; and every minister within the precinct of his territorie, and the dominion of his segniorie, raigne like a presbiter John : let it everlastingly be recorded for a soverain rule, as deare as a Jewes eye, that Josephus alledgeth out of the Law, *Nilil agat rex, sine pontificis, et seniorum sententia*. Onely let the sayd pontife beware he proove not a great pope in a little roome ; or discover not the humour of aspiring Stukely, that would rather be the king of a moulhill, then the second in Ireland, or England. Some stoiques and melancholie persons have a spice of ambition by themselves : and even *Junius Brutus*, the first, was somway a kinde of *Tarquinius Superbus* ; and *Junius Brutus* the second is not altogether a mortified creature, but bewrayeth as it were some reliques of fleshe and bloude, aswell as his inwardest friend *Eusebius Philadelphus*. I dare come no neerer : yet Greenwood and Barrow begin already to complaine of surly and solemne brethren ; and God knoweth how that pontificall chayer of estate might worke in man, as he is man.

Mercurie fublimed is somewhat a coy and stout fellow ; and I beleeeve thofe high and mighty peeres would not fticke to looke for a low and humble legge. Every man muft have his due in his place ; and honour aliably belongeth to redoubted feniors. That is their proper title at Geneva. Now, if it feeme as cleere a cafe in pollicie as in divinitie that one and the fame difcipline may ferve diuers and contrarie formes of regiment, and be as fitt for the head of England as for the foote of Geneva, the worft is, Aristotles politiques muft be burned for heretiques. But how happie is the age, that, inftead of a thoufand positive lawes and Lesbian canons, hath founde one ftanding canon of Polycletus, an immutable law of faged governement ! And what a bliffefull deftinie had the commonwealth that muft be the modell of all other commonwealthes, and the very center of the Chriftian world ! Let it be fo for ever and ever, if that Pamflet of *the Lawes and ftatutes of Geneva*, afwell concerning ecclefiafticall difcipline as civill regiment, deferue any fuch fingular or extraordinarie eftimation, either for the one or for the other. If not, are they not bufie men, that will needes beare a rule and ftrike a maine ftroke, where they have nothing to doe, or are to be ruled ? It were a good hearing, in my eare, that fome of them could governe themfelves but in reasonable wife fort, that are fo forward to fwey kingdomes, and to fwing churches after their new fafhion, and can ftande upon no grounde but their owne. If certaine of them be godlyer, or learneded, then many other (according to their favorableft reputation) it is the better for them : I would alfo they were wifer, then fome of them whom they impugne. Surely, I feare, they will be found more peremptorie in cenfure then founde in judge-

ment; and more smart in reproofe then sharp in prooffe. And may it not be a probable doubt how they have compared together *the Law* of Gods people, and *the Gospell* of Christes Church in the Bible; or how they have studded *Iosephus, Philo, and Egesippus* of the Jewish affaires; or *Sigonius* of the Hebrue Commonwealth; or *Freigius* his Mosaicus, or their owne *Bonaventura* of the Judaicall pollicy; that fetch their iurisdiction from the *Sanedrim* corrupted, and ground their reformation upon the Jewes *Thalmud*, the next neighbour to the Turkes *Alcoran*. Had *Ramus* Treatise of Discipline come to light, they would long-ere-this have beene ashamed of their Sanedrim, and have blushed to foist in the Thalmud, in steede of the Bible. God helpe poore discipline, if the water bee like the conduit, the oile like the lampe, and the plant like the tree! Abraham was the beginning, David the middest, and Christ the ende of the Hebrue history; his Gospell, not his enemies Thalmud, the pure fountaine of reformation, and the onely cleere resplendishing funne, that giveth light to the starres of heaven and earth; unto which the Church, his most deere and sweete spouse, is more deeply and more incomprehensibly bounden, then the day unto the funne that shineth from his glistering chariot. It is not for a pontificall seniory, or a mechanicall eldership, to stopp the course of any river that successively floweth from that liquid fountaine; or to putt-out any candle that was originally lighted at that inextinguible lampe. The Church hath small cause to dote upon the coosen-germane of tyranny, and the commonwealth hath no great affection to the sworn-brother of anarchy. Certainly states neede not long to interteine tumultuous and never-fatisfied innovation. Good my masters,

either make it an evident and infallible case, without sophistical wrangling, or personall brawling, that your un-experienced discipline, not the order approved, is the pure well of that divine spring, and the cleere light of that heavenly funne; or, I beseech you, pacifie yourselves, and surcease to endaunger kingdomes with unneedfull uprores. Crooked proceedings would be rectified by a right, not a crooked line; and abuses reformed, not by abusing the persons, but by well-using the things themselves. I spare my auncients, aswell at home as abroade; yet Beza might have bene good to some Doctours of the Church; and better then he is to *Ramus*, *Erasmus*, *Kemnitius*, and fundry other excellent men of this age: (neither can it sufficiently appeare that the two famous lawyers, *Gribaldus* and *Baldwinus*, were such monstrous apostates, or poysonous heritiques, as he reporteth :) and whither some other, neerer hand, have not bene too-familiarly bold with their superiours, of approved learning and wisedome, meete for their reverend and honorable calling, my betters judge.

Modesty is a civill vertue, and humility a Christian quality: surely, Martin is too too-malapert to be discreet, and Barrow too too-hoat to be wise: if they bee godly, God help charity; but, in my opinion, they little wot what a chaos of disorders and absurdities they breed, that sweat to build a reformation in a monarchy upon a popular foundation, or a mechanicall plott; and will needes be as fiery in execution, even to wring the clubb out of Hercules hand, as they were aëry in resolution. Alas! that wise men, and reformers of states (I know not a weightier province), should once imagine to finde it a matter of as light consequence to seniorise in a realme over the greatest lordes, and even

over the highnesse of majestie, as in a towne over a company of meane marchantes, and meaner artificers. I will not flicke, to make the best of it: M. Calvin, the founder of the plot (whome Beza stileth the great Calvin), had reason to establish his ministry against inconstancy, and to fortify himselfe against faction, (as he could best devise and compassse, with the assistance of his French party and other favorites) by encroaching upon a mechanick and mutinous people, from whose variable and fickle mutability he could no otherwise assure himselfe. As he sensibly found, not onely by dayly experiences of their giddy and factious nature, but also by his owne expulsion and banishment; whome, after a little triall, (as it were for a dainety novelty, or fly experiment) they could be content to use as kindly and loyally as they had used the old Bishopp, their lawfull Prince. Could M. Cartwright, or M. Traverse seaze upon such a citty, or any like popular towne, Helvetian or other, where democracy ruleth the roost, they should have somebodies good leave to provide for their owne security, and to take their best advantage upon tickle Cantons. Some one, peradventure, in time would canton them well enough, and give a shrewd pull at a metropolitan sea, as soveraine as the old bishoprike of Geneva. It were not the first time that a democracy by degrees hath proved an aristocracy, an aristocracy degenerated into an oligarchy, an oligarchy amounted to a tyranny, or principality. No rhetorique climax so artificall as that politique gradation. But in a just kingdome, where is other good assurance for ministers, and meeter counsels for princes, then such swarmes of imperious elderships, it is not for subjectes to usurpe, as commaunders may tyrannise in a small territory; unlesse they

meane to sett up a generall deformation, in lieu of an universall reformation ; and to bring-in an order that would soone proove a diluge of disorder, an overflow of anarchy, and an open fludgate to drowne pollicy with licentiousnes, nobility with obscurity, and the honour of realmes with the basenesse of Cantons. They that long for the bane and plague of their country, pray for that many-hedded and cantonish reformation ; in issue good for none, but the high judges of the consistory and their appropriate creatures, as I will justify at large, in case I be ever particularly challenged. I am no pleader for the regiment of the feete over the head, or the government of the stomacke over the hart : surely nothing can be more pernicious in practise, or more miserable in conclusion, then a commaunding authority in them that are borne to obey, ordained to live in private condition, made to follow their occupations, and bound to homage. You, that be schollars, moderate your invention with judgement ; and you, that be reasonable gentlemen, pacify your selves with reason. If it be an injury to enclose commons, what justice is it to lay-open enclosures ? And if monarchies must suffer popular states to enjoy their free liberties and amplest franchises, without the least infringement or abridgment, is there no congruence of reason that popular states should give monarchies leave to use their positive lawes, established orders, and royall prerogatives, without disturbance or confutation ? Bicause meaner ministers then lordes may become a popular cittie, or territorie, must it therefore be an absurditie in the majestie of a kingdome to have some lordes spirituall amongst so many temporall ; as well for the fitter correspondence and combination of both degrees ; their more reverend private direction in matters

of conscience; their weightier publique counsell in parlements and synods; the firmer assurance of the clergie in their causes; and the more honorable estimation of religion in all respectes? As for the solemner visitation of their dioces, and other competent jurisdiction, it is tyrannie, or vainglorie, not reverend lordship, that the scripture condemneth. There were bishops, or, as some will have them termed, superintendents, with episcopall superioritie and jurisdiction in the golden age of the apostles: *Timothie* of Ephesus, *Titus* of Crete, *Marke* of Alexandria, *James* of Jerusalem, *Philemon* of Gaza, the eloquent *Apollos* of Cæsarea, *Evodius* of Antioche, *Sosipater* of Iconium, according to Dorotheus of Theffalonica, according to Origene, *Tychicus* of Chalcedon, *Ananias* of Damascus, and so forth. Divers of the auncient fathers and doctours, as well of the Orientall as of the occidentall churches, were bishops, reverend fathers in Christ, and spirituall lordes. The same stile or title of reverence, hath successively continued to this age, without any empeachment of value, or contradiction of note, saving that of the angrie malcontent, and prowd heretique Aërius, scarcely worth the naming. What cruell outrage hath it lately committed, or what haynous indignitie hath it newly admitted, (more then other advauncementes of vertue, or stiles of honour) that it should now be cancelled, or abandoned in all hast? Would God, some were no stouter, or hawtier without the title, then some are with it! Many temporall lordes, dukes, princes, kinges, and emperours, have shoven very notable effectuall examples of Christian humilitie; and may not spirituall lordes carrie spirituall mindes? I hope they do; I know some doe; I am fuer all may, notwithstanding their ordinarie title, or an hundred

plausibie epithits. I would the lordship, or pompe of bishops, were the greatest abuse in commonwealthes, or churches. I feare me, I shall never live to see so happie a world upon the earth, that advised reformation should have nothing worse to complaine-off then that lordship or pompe. What may be, or is amisse in any degree, I defend not; (the delict of some one or two prelates, were it manifest, ought not to redounde to the damage or detriment of the church :) what may stande with the honour of the realme, with the benefite of the church, with the approbation of antiquitie, and with the canon of the scripture, I have no reason to impugne or abridge. I have more cause to suspect that some earnest dealers might be perswaded to dispense with the name of lordship in bishops, on condition themselves might be the parties, that would not secularlie abuse the title to any private pompe, or vanitie, but religiously applie it to the publique administration of the church, according to the first institution. Were dalliance safe in such cases, I could wishe the experiment in a person, or two, in whose complexions I have some insight. Doctour Humfry of Oxford, and doctour Fulke of Cambridge, two of their standard-bearers a long-time, grew conformable in the end as they grew riper in experience, and sager in judgement; and why may not such and such, in the like or weightier respectes, condescend to a like toleration of matters adiaphorall? Sith it will be no otherwise (maugre all admonitions, or whatsoever zealous motives) better relent with favour then resist in vayne. Were any fayre offer of preferment handsomely tendered unto some, that gape not greedily after promotion, nor can away with thiffame servile waiting, or plausibie courting for

living, I doubt not but wise men would see what were good for themselves, commodious for their friends, and convenient for the Church. If they should obstinately refuse deaneries and bishopricks, I should verely believe they are moved with stronger arguments, and pregnant authorities, then any they have yet published in print, or uttered in disputation, and I would be very glad to conferre with them for my instruction. Sound reasons and authentically quotations may prevail much; and no such invincible defence, as the armour of proofe. In the meane time the cause may be remembered that incensed the foresayd factious discontent, Aërius, to maintaine the equalitie of bishops and other priestes, when himselfe failed in his ambitious suite for a bishopricke: and all resteth upon a case of conscience, as nice and squeamish a scruple with some zealous marriage-prelates, as whether the fox, in some good respects, might be wooed to eat grapes. They that would pregnantly try conclusions, might, peradventure, finde such a temptation the materiallest and learnedest confutation that hath yet bene imprinted. Melancholie is deeply wise, and choler resolutely stout: they must persuade them essentially and feelingly, that will move them effectually. Were they entreated to yeelde, other arguments would subscribe of their owne gentle accord, and ingenuously confesse that opinion is not to prejudice the truth, or faction to derogate from authority. Possession was ever a strong defendant; and a just title maketh a puissant adversarie: bishops will governe with reputation when marriage-prelates must obey with reverence, or resist with contumacie. Errours in doctrine, corruptions in manners, and abuses in offices, would be reformed; but degrees of superiority, and orders of obedience are

needefull in all estates, and especially in the clergie as necessarie as the sunne in the day, or the moone in the night ; or cock-on-hoope, with a hundred thousand curates in the world, would proove a mad discipline. Let order be the golden rule of proportion, and I am as forward an admonitioner as any precisian in England. If disorder must be the discipline, and confusion the reformation, (as, without difference of degrees, it must needs,) I crave pardon. *Anarchie* was never yet a good states-man, and *Ataxie* will ever be a badd church-man, That same lustie downfall is too-hoat a pollicie for my learning ; they were best to be content to let bishopricks stande, that would be loth to see religion fall, or the clergie troden under foote. He conceiveth little that perceiveth not what bondes hold the world in order, and what tenures maintaine an assurance in estates. Were ministers stipendiaries, or pensioners, (which hath also bene a wise motion) and all without distinction alike esteemed,—that is, all, without regard, alike contemned and abjected (which would be the issue of unequal equality) woe to the poore ministry ! and the cunningest practise of the consistorie, should have much adoe to stopp those gapps, and recure those sores. Never a more succourlesse orphan, or a more desolate widdow, or a more distressed pilgrim then such a ministry ; untill, in a thirsty and hungry zeale, it should eft-soones retire to former provisions, and recover that auncient œconomy ecclesiasticall. The surest revenue and honorablest salary of that coate, much-better, iwis, then the souldiours pay, or the serving-mans wages. Equality in things equall is a just law, but a respective valuation of persons is the rule of equity ; and they little know into what incongruities and absurdities they runne headlong, that are

weary of *geometrical proportion*, or distributive justice, in the collation of publique functions, offices, or promotions, civile or spirituall. God bestoweth his blessings with difference ; and teacheth his Lieutenant, the Prince, to estimate and preferre his subjectes accordingly. When better autors are alledged for equalitie in persons unequall, I will live and dye in defence of that equalitie, and honour *arithmetically proportion* as the onely ballance of justice, and sole standard of government. Meane-while, they that will-be wiser then God and their Prince, may continue a peevisish scrupulositie in subscribing to their ordinances, and nurrish a rebellious contumacie in refusing their orders. I wish unto my frendes as unto miselfe, and recomende learning to discretion, conceit to judgment, zeale to knowledge, dutie to obedience, confusion to order, uncertaintie to assurance, and unlawfull noveltie to lawfull uniformitie ; the sweetest repose that the commonwealth or church can enjoy. *Regnum divisum*, a soverain text, and what notabler glosse upon a thousand texts ? Or what more cordiall restorative of boddy or soule then *Ecce quàm bonum, et quàm jucundum* ? Sweet my masters, be sweet ; and without the least bitterneffe of unnecessarie strife, tender your affectionatest devotions of zeale and honour, to the best contentment of your frends, your patrons, your prince, the commonwealth, the church, the Almighty ; which so dearely loove, so bountifully maintaine, so mightily protect, so gratioously favour, and so indulgentially tender you. Confounde not yourselves, and what people this day more blessed, or what nation more flourishing ? Some fervent, and many counterfeit loovers adore their mistresses, and commit idolatrie to the least of their bewties ; oh ! that we knew what a sacrifice obedience were, and what a jewell of jewells he offereth

that presenteth charitie, without which we may talke of doctrine, and discourse of discipline, but doctrine is a parrat, discipline an eccho, reformation a shaddow, sanctification a dreame without charitie, in whose sweet boosome reconciliation harboureth, the dearest friend of the church, and the onely *est amen* of so infinite controversies. That reconciliation setteth it selfe to examine matters barely, without their veales or habiliments, according to the counsell of Marcus Aurelius; and to define things simply, without any colours or embellishments, according to the preceptes of Aristotle and the examples of Ramus, and the most-endlesse altercations, being generally rather verball then reall, and more circumstantiall then substantiall, will soone grow to an ende. Which end humanitie hasten, if there be any spice of humanitie; divinitie dispatch, if there be any remnant of divinitie; heaven accomplish, if the graces of heaven be not locked-up; and earth embrace, if reconciliation hath not forsaken the earth. If falshood be weake, as it is weake, why should it longer hold-upp head; and if truth be truth, that is, great and mightie, why should it not prevayle? Most-excellent truth! show thyselfe in thy victorious maiestie, and mauger whatsoever encounter of witt, learning, or furie, prevayle puissantly.

These notes, if they happen to see light, are especially intended to the particular use of a few, whom, in affectionate good-will, I would wish to stay their wisedomes. Did I not entirely pittie their case, and extraordinarily favour some commendable partes in them, they should not easely have cost me halfe thus many lines; every one worse bestowed then other, if constancie in errour be a credit, in disobedience a bonde, in vice a vertue, in miserie a felicitie.

He that writt the premisses affecteth truth as precisely as any precisian in Cambrige or Oxford, and hateth even loove itselfe in comparison of truth, which he is ever to tender with a curious devotion ; but a man may be as blinde in overseeing as in seeing nothing ; and he may shoote farther from the marke, that overshooteth, then he that shooteth short or wide. As alwayes some motespying heades have so scrupulously ordered the matter, *ut intelligendo nihil intelligerent*, I would be loth to fall into the handes of any such captious and mutinous witts ; but if it be my fortune to light upon hard interteinement, what remedie ? I have had some little tampering with a kinde of extortioners and barratours in my time ; and feare not greatly any bugges, but in charitie or in dutie. Wrong him not that would gladly be well-taken where he meaneth well, and, once for all, protesteth, he loveth humanitie with his hart, and reverenceth divinitie with his foule ; as he would rather declare in deede then professe in worde. If he erreth, it is for want of knowledge, not for want of zeale ; howbeit, for his fuller contentment, he hath also done his endeavour to know something on both sides ; and, laying-aside partialitie to the persons, hath privately made the most equall and sincere analysis of their severall allegations and proofes, that his logique and divinitie could sett downe. For other analyses he overpassed, as impertinent, or not specially materiall. After such examination of their authorities and argumentes, not with a rigorous censure of either, but with a favorable construction of both, pardon him, though he presume to deliver some part of his animadversions in such termes as the instant occasion presenteth ; not for any contentious or sinister purpose (the world is too full of litigious and barratous

pennes) but for the satisfaction of those that desire them, and the advertisement of those that regard them; who, according to any indifferent or reasonable analysis, shall finde the sharpest inventions and weightiest judgmentes of their leaders, nothing so autenticall, or current, as was prejudicately expected. It is no peece of my intention to instruct where I may learne, or to controule any superiour of qualitie, that in conscience may affect, or in pollicie seeme to countenance that side. With Martin and his applauders, Browne and his adherents, Barrow and his complices, Kett and his sectaries, or whatsoever commotioners of like disposition (for never such a flush of scismaticque heads, or heretique witts) that like the notorious H. N., or the presumptuous David George, or that execrable Servetus, or other turbulent rebells in religion, would be Turkesing and innovating they wott not what, I hope it may become me to be almost as bold as they have bene with judges, bishops, archbishops, princes, and with whom not, howsoever learned, wise, vertuous, reverend, honorable, or soverain. Or if my coole dealing with them be insupportable, I beleeeve their hoat practising with lordes and princes was not greatly tolerable. Be as it may, that is done on both sides cannot be undone; and if they weene they may offende outragiously without injurie, other are fuer, they may defend moderately with justice. When that seven-fold sheild faileth, my plea is at an ende; albeit my making or marring were the client. Whiles the seven-fold shield holdeth-out, he can doe little that cannot hold it upp. A strong apologie enhabbleth a weake hand, and a good cause is the best advocate. Some sleepe not to all, and I watch not to every-one. If I be understood with effect, where I with at least a demurrer with

stayed advisement and consultation, I have my desier, and not wil tediously importune other. I doubt not of many contrary instigations, and some bold examples of turbulent spirits; but heat is not the meetest judge on the bench, or the foundest divine in disputation: and in matters of government, but especially in motions of alteration, that runne their heads against a strong wall, Take heede is a fayre thing. Were there no other considerations, the place and the time are two weightie and mightie circumstances; it is a very nimble feather, that will needes out-runne the wing of the time, and leave the fayles of regiment behinde. Men are men, and ever had, and ever will have, their imperfections: Paradise tasted of imperfections; the golden age, whensoever it was most golden, had some drosse of imperfections; the patriarkes felt some fits of imperfections; Moses tabernacle was made acquainted with imperfections; Salomons temple could not cleere itselfe from imperfections; the primitive Church wanted not imperfections; Constantine's devotion founde imperfections; what reformation could ever say, I have no imperfections? or will they, that dubb themselves the little flocke, and the onely remnant of Israel, say, We have no imperfections? Had they none, as none have more then some of those Luciferian spirits, it is an unkinde birde that defileth his kinde neast; and a proud husband-man that can abide no tares amongst wheate, or upbraideth the corne with the cockle. There is a God above that heareth prayers; a prince beneath that tendereth supplications; lordes on both sides that patronise good causes; learned men that desire conference; time to consider upon essentiall pointes; knowledge that loveth zeale, as zeale must reverence knowledge; trueth, that displayeth and

investeth it selfe; conscience, that is a thousand witnesses, even against it selfe. When the question is *de re*, to dispute *de homine* is sophistical; or, when the matter dependeth in controversie, to cavill at the forme, is captious; the abuse of the one, were it proved, abolisheth not the use of the other. What, should impertinent secrecies be revealed, or needles quarrels picked, or every proposition wrinched to the harshest sense? What, should honest mindes and excellent witts be taunted and boured without rime or reason? What, should insolent and monstrous phantasticality extoll and glorify it selfe above the cioudes, without cause or effect? When, where, and how, should Martin junior be purified, Martin senior faintified, Browne evangelistified, Barrow apostolified, Kett angelified, or the patriarke of the loovely familistes, H. N., deified, more then all the world beside? Were it possible that this age should affoord a divine and miraculous Elias, yet, when Elias himselfe deemed himselfe most desolate, and complained hee was left all-alone, there remained thousandes living that never bowed their knees unto Baal. But faction is as sure a keeper of counsell as a five, spite as close a secretary as a skummer, innovation, at the least, a bright angel from heaven; and the foresaid abstractes of pure divinity will needes know why Junius Brutus, or Eusebius Philadelphus should rather be Pasquils incarnate then they. If there be one Abraham in Ur, one Lot in Sodome, one Daniell in Babilon, one Jonas in Ninive, one Job in Huz; or if there bee one David in the court of Saule, one Obadia in the court of Achab, one Jeremy in the court of Zedechias, one Zorobabel in the court of Nebuchodonosor, one Nehemias in the court of Artaxerxes, or any singular blessed one in any good or bad court, citty, state, kingdome, or nation,

it must be one of them ; all other, of whatsoever dignity or desert, what but reprobates, apostataes, monsters, tyrants, pharises, hypocrites, false prophets, belly-gods, worldlings, ravenous wolves, crafty foxes, dogs to their vomite, a generation of vipers, limmes of Sathan, divels incarnate, or such like. For Erasmus poore *copia verborum*, and Omphalius sory furniture of invective and declamatory phrases must come shorte in this comparifon of the rayling faculty. I know no remedy but the prayer of charitie, and the order of authority ; whome it concerneth to deale with libels as with thornes, with phansies as with weedes, and with heresies or scismes, as with hydras heads. It hath bene alwayes one of my obfervations, but especially of later yeares, since these Numantine skirmishes, the better scholler, indeede, the colder scismaticke, and the hotter scismaticke the worse schollar. What an hideous and incredible opinion did David Gorge conceive of himself : H. N. was not afraide to insult over al the fathers, doctors, schoolmen, and new-writers, ever since the evangelists and apostles : Browne challenged all the doctours and other notablest graduats of Cambridge and Oxford : Kett, though something in astrology and phyficke, yet a rawe devine, how obstinate and untractable in his fantasticke assertions ! Barrow taketh upon him, not onely above Luther, Zuinglius, Oecolampadius, Brentius, and all the vehementest Germane Protestants, but also above Calvin, Viret, Beza, Marlorat, Knox, Melvin, Cartwright, Traverfe, Fenner, Penry, and all our importuneft sollicitours of reformation, howsoever qualified with giftes, or reputed amongst their favorits. Illuminate understanding is the rare byrd of the church, and graund intendimentes come by a certaine extraordinarie and supernaturall

revelation. One unlearned singularist hath more in him then ten learned precisians : give me the brave fellow that can carrie a dragons tayle after him. Tush ! universitie-learning is a dunse ; and schoole-divinitie a Sorbonist. It is not art, or modesty, that maketh a Rabi-Alphes, or a ringleader of multitudes. David Gorge, the Archprophet of the world, H. N., the Archevangelist of Christ, and Barrow, the Archapostle of the Church : superhappy creatures, that have illuminate understanding, and ground intendiments at the best hand ! Miraculous Barrow, that so hugely exceedeth his auncients in the pure arte of reformation ! But undoubtedly his kingdome cannot flourish long ; as he hath blessed his seniors, so he must be annointed of his juniors : me thinkes I see an other, and an other headd, suddainely starting-uppon Hydras shoulders : farewell H. N. and welcome Barrow ! adieu Barrow, and all-haile thou angelicall spirite of the Gospell, whose face I see in a christall, more pure then purity it selfe : the depression of one, the exaltation of an other ; the corruption of one, the generation of an other ; no feede so fertile, or rancke, as the feede of scisme, and the sperme of heresy. Christ aide his assaulted fort ; and blisse the feede of Abraham ! and in honor of excellent arts and worthy professions, be it ever faide, the best learned are best advised.

Even Cardinall Sadolet, Cardinall Poole, and Omphalius, commended the milde and discrete disposition of Melancthon, Bucer, and Sturmius, when they first stirred in Germany : the Queene Moother of Fraunce and the Cardinall of Lorraine praysed Ramus, albeit hee was knowen to favourise the Prince of Condy : Jovius praysed Reuclin and Camerarius, as Peucer praysed Jovius and Bembus ; Ofo-

rius prayfed Afcham, as Afcham prayfed Watfon ; and who prayfed not Sir John Cheeke ? how exceedingly did Cardan praife him ? Sir Thomas Smith, her Majefties ambaffadour in Fraunce in the raignes of Henry the Second, Francis the Second, and Charles the Ninth, was honored of none more then of fome French and Italian cardinals and bifhops : the kings fonnes favored his fonne, as well after, as before their coronation. Neander, in his late Chronicle, and later Geographie, praifeth here and there certaine papiftes : and did not Agrippa, Erasmus, Duarene, and Bodine, occafionally praife as many Protestants ? It was a sweet and divine vertue that stirred-up loove and admiration in fuch adverfaries ; and doubtleffe they carried an honeft and honorable mynde, that forgot themfelves and their frendes to doe their enemies reafon, and vertue right. A vertue that I often feeke, feldome finde ; wifh-for in many, hope-for in fome, looke-for in few ; reverence in a fuperiour, honour in an inferiour ; admire in a frend, loove in a foe ; joy to fee, or heare, in one or other. Perverfe natures are forward to difguife themfelves, and to condemne not onely curtefie, or humanitie, but even humilitie, and charitie itfelfe, with a nick-name of Newtralitie, or Ambidexteritie ; terme it what you lift, and mifcall it at your pleasure : certes it is an excellent and foverain qualitie, that in a firme refolution never to abandon vertue, or to betray the truth, ftealeth intertainment from difpleafure, favour from offence, loove from enmitie, grace from indignation ; and not like Homers Syren, but like Homers Minerva, traineth partialitie to a liking of the adverfe partie ; diffenfion to a commendation of his contrarie ; errour to an embracement of truth ; and even corruption himfelfe to an advauncement of valour, of

desert, of integritie, of that morall and intellectuall good, that so gratioously insinuateth, and so forcible emprooveth itselfe. Oh, that learning were ever married to such discretion, witt to such wisedome, zeale to such vertue, contention to such moralitie! and oh, that such private government might appeare in those that pleade most importunately for publique government! Oh, that Plato could teach Xenocrates; Aristotle, Callisthenes; Theophrastus, Aristotle; Eunapius, Iamblicus to sacrifice to the sweet graces of Mercurie! What should I sayle, or shadow a good purpose? Oh a thousand times, that Melancton could traine Junius Brutus; Sturmius, Philadelphus; Ramus, Beza; Jewell, Cartwright; Deering, Martin; Baro, Barrow, to embrace the heavenly graces of Christ, and to kisse the hand of that divine creature, that passeth all understanding! What a felicitie were it to see such heades as pregnant as hydras heades, or hydras heades as rare as such heades!

It is not my meaning to deface, or prejudice, any that unfainedly meaneth well: if, perchance, I happen to touch some painted walles, and godly hypocrites, (godlinesse is become a strange creature) should they be truly godly) let them keepe their owne counsell, and cease to affect new reputation by old heresies. The Jewes had their holly-holly-holly *Effieans*; their seperate and precise *Pharises*; their daily regenerate and puritane *Hemerobaptistes*; their fervent and illuminate Zelotistes; onely in shape men, in conversation saincts, in insinuation angels, in profession demi-gods; as descended from heaven, to blesse the earth, and to make the citie a Paradise that washed their feete. Jesus blesse good mindes from the blacke enemy, when he attireth himselfe like an Angell of light! Judas the Gaulo-

nite, in the reigne of Herode the Great, was an hoat toft, and a marvelous zelotift : when the Emperour Octavian taxing the world, and affeffing Judea, like other nations, who but he, in the abundance of his mightie zeale, was the man that fett it downe for a canonicall doctrine, that the people of God was to acknowledge no other Lord but God ; and that it was a flaviſh bondage to pay any ſuch exaction, or impoſition, unto Auguſtus : and having given out that principle for an infallible rule, or rather a ſacred law, very vehemently ſollicited and importuned the people (as the manner is) to live and dye in the cauſe of their God and their libertie. But ſweet Chriſt was of a milder and meeker ſpirite ; and both payed tribute himſelfe to avoyde offence, and ſet it downe for an eternal maxime in his goſpell, Give unto Cæſar that belongeth unto Cæſar, and unto God, that belongeth unto God. Zelous Judas, the Gaulonite, and ſervent Simon, the Galilean, two ſingular reformers of the Judaicall ſynagoge, pretended ſayre for a pure type, or exquisite platforme of the ſoundeſt, exacteſt, and preciſeſt Hebraicall diſcipline ; but what prophane idolatric ſo plagued that divine commonwealth as that ſame ſcrupulous zeale ? or what made that bleſſed ſtate utterly miſerable, but that ſame unruly and tumultuous zeale, that would not be content with reaſon untill it was too late ? For a time, they ſuppoſed themſelves the worthieſt and rareſt creatures in Judea, or rather the onely men of that ſtate ; and in a deepe conceit of a neat and undefiled puritie, divorced, ſequeſtered themſelves from the corrupt ſocietie of other : but alas ! that any purified mindes ſhould pay ſo dearely and ſmartly for their fine phanſies, which coſt them no leſſe then the moſt lamentable overthrow of their whole common-wealth. You

that have languages and arts, more then divers other of good qualitie, and can use them with methode, and a certaine plausible opinion of great learning, be as excellent and singular as you possible can for your lives in a direct course ; but be not peevish or odd in a crooked balke, that leadeth out of the kinges high-way, and Christes owne path, into a maze of confusion, and a wildernesse of desolation, the finall ende of these endlesse contentions, if they be not otherwise calmed by private discretion, or cutt-short by publike order. The first example of division was perillous ; and what rankes or swarmes of insatiable scisme incontinently followed ! It is a mad world when every crew of conceited punyes, puffed-up with a presumptuous or phantastickall imagination, must have their severall complot, or faction, as it were a certaine Punicall warre ; whose victorie wilbe like that of Carthage against Roome, if it be not the sooner quieted. Remember Judas the Gaulonite, and forgett not yourselves : inordinate zeale is a pernicious reformer ; and destruction a deare purchase of plotts in moonshine. S. Paule, the heroicall apostle, could not finde a more excellent way then charitie, the most soverain way of faith and hope ; any other defeigne of puritie or singularity buildeth not up, but pulleth-downe ; and of more then a million in hope, prooveth lesse then a cipher in effect. What the salvation of David Gorge ? a nullitie : what the deification of H. N. ? a nullitie : what the glorification of Kett ? a nullitie : what the sanctification of Browne ? a nullitie : what the communitie of Barrow ? a nullitie : what the plausibilitie of Martin ? a nullitie : what a thousand such popular motives, allectives, incensives, aggravations of the least corruption, amplifications of the highest felicitie,

new landes of promise, overflowing with milke and honny, fooles Paradises, glorious innovations, but present shame, wretched confusion, utter ruine, everlasting infamie, horrible damnation, and a most hideous nullity? Even the great hurly-burly of the Church, the imagined-heavenly discipline; and the very topsy-turvy of the state, the pretended-divine reformation; of two mightie giants, what can they possiblie emprove themselves, but silly pigmyes, and a most pittifull nullitie? Sweet charitie, ensweeten these bitter garboiles; and seing they so instantly and importunately affect a perfect platforme, give them a most curious and exquisite table of pure reformation, even the true picture of thysel. Surer prevention of mischiefe and ruine, I know none.

I had here bidden Martin in the Vintry farewell, and taken my leave of this tedious discourse (for no man taketh lesse delight in invectives) were I not newly certified of certaine fresh and frantique practises for the erection of the Synedrion in all hast, whose complotters are weary of melancholy projects, and begin to resolve on a cholerique course. Hoat arguments are fiercely threatened, in case the discipline be not the sooner interteined; but methinks that warme course should scarcely be the stile of pure mortification, and haply foster fier would make sweeter mault. A little advisement doth not much amisse in capitall, or daungerous attemptes. It were well the blowing bellowes might be entreated to keepe their winde for a fitter opportunitie; or if fier boilyng in the stomacke must needs breake-out at the mouth, the best comfort is, the country affordeth sufficient provision of water to encounter the terriblest vulcanist that brandisheth a burning sword, or a fierie toung. Howbeit, some looker-on, that feares not

greatly the flame, cannot but marvell at the smoake, and had rather see them breathing-out the fume of divine tobacco, then of furious rage. I have read of politique Jewes that for their commoditie have become Christians, whom in Spaine and Italy they terme *Retaliados*; but that politique Christians for any benefit, promotion, or other regard whatsoever, should practise to become Jews, in doctrine or discipline, in earnest or in devise, in whole or in part, it were strange and almost incredible, if the world were not growen a monstrous *Retaliado* for his advantage; and the voyce of Jacob prooved a more gaynfull stratageme for the hands of Esau then ever the hands of Esau were for the voice of Jacob. I charge not any that are cleere: (would there were no more Jewish Pharises then Hebrue worthies) but let not them accuse me for speaking, that condemne themselves for doing; or shew themselves faints in the premisses, that will scantly proove honest men in the conclusion. All are not ledd with the same respectes that hang on the same string; some are carried with one consideration, some with an other; some tender divinity as their soule; some loove religion as their boddy; some favour the gospell as their fortune: I doubt not but some desier discipline for conscience; and do none coovet reformation for gayne, or were it impossible to point out a *Retaliado* convert in the whottist throng of those fresh proselites? If there be no *Retaliados* in Christendome, I am glad I have sayd nothing; if there be, they may so long mocke other in wordes, that at last they will most deceive themselves in deedes. I am beholding to the old Jurie, but have no great phansie to a new, either in London or elsewhere: when amongst divers other histories of Jewish enormities, I re-

member how an auncient Archbishop of Canterbury, one John Peckam, was fayne to take order with the Bishop of London then being, for the dissoluzion and destruction of all the synagoges in his dioces. The lesse neede of any such order at this instant, all the better. I will not dispute whither a Synedrion presuppose a synagoge; or whither it be not as insupportable a yoke for any king, or mightie state, as it was for King Herode, or the Romanes, that found it intolerable: (methinkes the wisest Sanedrith of a thousand should hardly perswade me that he is a friend of princes, or no enemy of monarchies;) but I know somuch by some, none of the meanest schollers, or obscurest men in Europe, touching their opinion of the Old and New Testament, of the Thalmud, of the Alcoran, of the Hebrue, Christian, and Turkish histories, that I deeme any thing suspicious and perillous, that any-way inclineth to Judaisme, as fell an aduersarie to Christianitie as the wolfe to the lambe, or the goshawk to the doove. Graunt them an inch, they will soone take an ell with the advantage; and were any part of their discipline on foote, could the boddy of their doctrine want an head? or might not the parishe proove a disorderly congregation, as bad as a synagoge, where the Judiciall bench were a Synedrion? The Jewes are a suttile, and mischeevous people, and have cunningly inveigled some students of the holly tounge with their miraculous Cabala from Moses, their omniscious cosmologie from Salomon, their Caldæan sapience from Daniell, and other profound secretes of great pretence; but their liberall gifts bite like their usurie, and they are finally founde to intertaine them best that shutt them quite out of doores, with their Sanedrim and all. They can tell a precious tale of

their divine senate, and of their venerable Meokekim, revered like living lawes, but were all judgements actually drawn to the divine senate, and all lawes solemnly to be fetched from the venerable Meokekim, as from speaking oracles, might not these, and their other metaphysicall mysteries be enregistred in the same Thalmud, or might it not proove a pinching reformation for Christendome? I have tasted of their verball miracles, and cannot greatly commend their personall vertues; but their reall usurie is known through-out the Christian world to be an unmercifull tyrant; and I feare me, their consistoriall jurisdiction would growe a cruell griper, especially being so universally extended in every parish, as is intended by the promoters thereof, and powerably armed with that supreme and uncontrowlable authoritie, which they affect in causes ecclesiasticall. A brave spirituall motion, and worthie not onely of these pidling sturres, but even of a Trojan warre. Yet their precedent, the Mosaicall Synedrion, was a civil court, (as is afore mentioned, and would be reconsidered) *cum mero imperio*; and when it became mixt it was not merely ecclesiasticall; and when it became meerly ecclesiasticall, of a pontifical consistory, it soone proved a tyranicall court, and, by your good leave, was as nimble to encroach upon civill causes, being an ecclesiasticall court, as ever it was to intermeddle with ecclesiasticall causes, being a civil court. The finest Methodists, according to Aristotles golden rule of artificiall boundes, condemne geometricall preceptes in arithmetique, or arithmeticall preceptes in geometrie, as irregular and abusive; but never artist so licentiously heterogeneous, or so extravagantly exceeded his prescribed limits, as ambition or covetice. Every miller is ready to convey

the water to his owne mill ; and neither the high priestes of Jerusaleme, nor the popes of Roome, nor the patriarkes of Constantinople, nor the pastors of Geneva, were ever hastie to binde their owne handes. They that research antiquities, and inquier into the privities of practises, shall finde an act of *præmunire* is a necessarie bridle in some cases. The first bishops of Roome were undoubtedly vertuous men and godly pastors ; from bishops they grew to be popes : what more reverend then some of those bishops, or what more tyrannicall then some of those popes ? Aaron and the high priestes of Jerusaleme, and of other ceremoniall nations, were their glorious mirrours, and they deemed nothing too-magnificall, or pompous, to breede an universall reverence of their sacred autoritie and hierarchie. We are so farre alienated from imitating, or allowing them, that we cannot abide our owne bishops ; yet withall would have every minister a bishop, and would also be fetching a new patterne from old Jerusaleme, the moother-sea of the high-priesthood. So the world (as the manner is) will needes runne about in a circle : pull-downe bishops, set up the minister ; make him bishop of his parish, and head of the consistorie, (call him how you list, that must be his place,) what will become of him within a few generations, but a high priest in a low Jerusaleme, or a great pope in a small roome ? And then, where is the difference betweene him and a bishop, or rather, betweene him and a pope ? not so-much in the qualitie of his jurisdiction, when in effect he may be his owne judge, as in the quantitie of his dioces, or temporalities. Or, in case he be politique, as some popes have bene glad for their advantage to tyrannise popularly, so he may chauce be content for his advauncement, to

popularise tyrannically, and shall not be the first of the clergie that hath cunningly done it with a comely grace. Something there must be of a monarchie in free states, and something there will be of free states in a monarchie. The discreeter and uprighter the curate is, the more circumspectly he will walke, and degenerate the lesse; yet what generation without degeneration, or what revolution without irregularitie? One inconvenience begetteth an other, enormities grow like evill weedes; take heede of a mischiefe, and where then will be the corruptions? or how shall defection (acknowledging no primacie, or superioritie in any person, or court) retire to his first institution? if percase there should growe a conspiracie in fellowship, one consistory justifie an other for advantage, and their whole synods fall-out in consequence, to be like their parts? Men may erre, and frailtie will slipp. What, should I alledge historyes or authorities? It is no newes for infirmitie to fall, when it should stand; or for appetite to rebell, when it should obey. Every sonne of Adam a reed shaken with the wind of passion, a weake vessell, a schollar of imperfection, a master of ignorance, a doctour of errour, a pastour of concupiscence, a superintendent of avarice, a lord of ambition, a prince of sinne, a slave of mortalitie. Flesh is flesh, and blud a wanton, a chaungeling, a compound of contrary elementes, a revoulting and retrograde planet, a sophister, an hypocrite, an impostour, an apostata, an heretique; as convertible as Mercury, as variable as the weather-cock, as lunatique as the moone; a generation of corruption, a whore of Babylon, a limme of the world, and an impe of the divell. It is their owne argument in other mens case, and why should it not be other mens argument in their case,

unlesse they can shew a personall priuiledge *ad imprimendum solum*? They may speake as they list; termes of sanctification and mortification are free for them that will use them; but the common opinion is, even of the forwardest skirmishers at this day, they doe like other men, and live like the children of the world, and the brethren of themselves. Some of them have their neighbours good leave to be their owne proctors, or advocats, if they please: yet how probable is it they are now at their very best, and even in the neatest and purest plight of their incorruption, whiles their mindes are abstracted from worldly thoughts to a high meditation of their supposed heavenly reformation, and whiles it necessarily behooveth them to stand charily and nicely upon the credit of their integritie, sinceritie, precisenesse, godlinesse, zeale, and other vertues. When such respects are over, and their purpose compassed according to their harts desire; who can tell how they, or their successors, may use the keyes, or how they will besturr them with the sword? If flesh proove not a Pope Joane, and bloud a Pope Hildebrand, good enough. Accidents, that have happened, may happen agayne; and all thinges under the sunne are subiect to casualtie, mutabilitie, and corruption. At all adventures it is a brave position, to maintaine a soverain and supreme autoritie in every consistorie, and to exempt the minister from superiour censure, like the high priest, or greatest pontiffe, whom Dionysius Halycarnasseus calleth *ἀνυπεύθυνον*. He had neede be a wise and conscionable man, that should be a parliament, or a chauncerie unto himselfe; and what a furniture of divine perfections were requisite in the Church, where so many ministers, so many spirituall high iustices of Oier and Terminer, and every one

a supreme tribunall, a fynode, a generall councell, a canon law, a heavenly law, and gospel unto himfelfe. If no ferpent can come within his paradife, fafe enough. Or, were it poffible, that the paſtor (although a man, yet a divine man) ſhould, as it were, by inheritance, or ſucceſſion, continue a ſainct from generation to generation: is it alſo neceſſary that the whole company of the redoubted ſeniors ſhould wage everlaſting warre with the fleſh, the world, and the divell, and eternally remaine an incorruptible Arcopage, without wound or ſcarre? Never ſuch a colledge or fraternitie upon earth, if that be their inviolable order. But God helpe conceit, that buildeth churches in the ayer, and platformeth diſciplines without ſtayne or ſpott!

They complaine of corruptions, and worthily, where corruptions encroche (I am no patron of corruptions); but what a furling ſea of corruptions would overflow within few years, in caſe the ſword of ſo great and ample autoritie, as that at Jeruſalem moſt capitall, or this at Geneva moſt redoubted, were putt into the hand of ſo little capacitie in government, ſo little diſcretion in diſcipline, ſo little judgement in cauſes, ſo little moderation in living, ſo little conſtancie in ſaying or doing, ſo little gravitie in behaviour, or ſo little whatſoever ſhould procure reverence in a magiſtrate, or eſtabliſh good order in a commonwealth! Travaile thorough ten thouſand parishes in England, and when you have taken a favourable vew of their ſubſtancialleſt and ſufficienteſt aldermen, tell me, in good ſooth, what a comely ſhowe they would make in a conſiſtorie? or with how ſolemne a preſence they would furniſh a councell table? I beleeve *Grimaldus* did little thinke of any ſuch ſenatours, when he writ *de Optimo Senatore*; or did Doctour *Bar-*

tholomew Philip, in his Perfect Counsellour, ever dreame of any such counsellours? Petty principalities, petty tyrants; and such fenats, such senatours. Witt might devise a pleasurable dialogue betwixt the leather pilch and the velvet coate, and helpe to perswade the better to deale neighbourly with the other; the other to content himselfe with his owne calling. I deny not but the short apron may be as honest a man, or as good a Christian as the long gowne; but methinkes he should scantly be so good a judge, or assistant in doubtfull causes; and I suppose, *ne futor ultrà crepidam*, is as fitt a proverbe now as ever it was, since that excellent painter rebuked that sawcie cobler. Every subject is not borne to be a magistrate, or officer; and who knoweth not whose creature superiour power is? They are very-wise that are wiser then he, by whose divine permission every one is that he is. The *Laconicall Ephory* hath lately borne a great swing in some resolute discourses of princes and magistrates, that thought they saved the world from the abomination of desolation, when they found-out a bridle, or yoke, for princes; but old Aristotle was a deepe politician *in dubus illis*, and his reasons against that Ephorie (for Aristotle confuted the Ephorie with sounder arguments then ever it was confirmed to this day) would not yet perhaps be altogether contemned: That so great judiciable causes were committed to men, indued with so little or no vertue; that the poore plebians for very penurie were easely bribed and corrupted; that there ensued an alteration of the state, the good kinges being sayne to currie favour with their great masters, and to become popular. Whither this would be the end, and may be the marke of those, or our populars, I offer it to their consideration that are most interessd in such motions

of Ephoryes and Senioryes. The world is beholding to brave and heroically mynides, that, like Hercules, would practise meanes to pull downe tyrannie, small, or great, and reforme whole empires and churches, like the three victorious emperours surnamed *magni*, Constantine, Theodosius, and Charles. Thankes were an insufficient recompense for so noble intentions : it must be a guerdon of value that should countervail their desert that pretend so fatherly and patronly a care of reedifying commonwealthes and churches. Some voluntarie counsellours doe well in a state ; and men of extraordinary vocation, singularly qualified for the purpose, are worth their double weight in gold. When other sleepe, they watch ; when other play, they worke ; when other feast, they fast ; when other laugh, they sigh ; whiles other are content to be lulled in securitie and nuzzled in abuse, they occupie themselves in devising pregnant bondes of assurance, and exquisite models of reformation ; which must presently be advanced without further consultation, or they have courage, and will use it in maintenaunce of so divine abstractes. Melancholie is peremptory in resolution, and choler an æger executioner : were it not for those two invincible arguments, there might still be order taken with other reasons and authorities whatsoever. They do well to presuppose the best of their owne designses, and to give-out cardes of Fortunate Ilandes, artificially drawn ; but as I never read, or heard of any people that committed swordes into such hands, but bought their experience with losse, and had a hard penyworth of their soft cushion, so, in my simple consideration, I cannot conceive how ignorance should become a meeter officer then knowledge ; affection a more incorrupt magistrate then reason ; headlong rashnesse, or

wilfull stubborneſſe, a more upright judge then mature deliberation; baſe occupations enact and eſtabliſh better orders then liberall ſciences, or honorable profeſſions; (any traffique, howſoever current or advantageous, hath bene judged undecent for a ſenatour;) tagg and ragg adminiſter all things abſolutely well, with due proviſion againſt whatſoever poſſible inconveniences, where ſo many faults are found with perſons of better qualitie, that incomparablie have more ſkil in the adminiſtration of publique affaires, more knowledge and experience in cauſes, more reſpect in proceeding, more regard of their credit, more ſenſe of dangerous enormities, or contagious abuſes, more care of the flouriſhing and durable eſtate of the prince, the commonwealth, and the Church. Na, I can ſee no reaſon, according to the beſt groundes of pollicie that ever I read, but for every civill tyranny, or pettie miſdemeanour that can poſſible happen now, the governement ſtanding as it doth, there muſt needes upſtart a hundred and a hundred barbarous tyrannies and huge outrages, were the new platformes, actes of Parla ment, and the complotters, ſuch high commiſſioners, as are deſcribed in their owne projects, the flouriſhes of unexperienced wittes. When they have nothing elſe to alledge, that ſhould make them ſuperiour or equall to the preſent officers, conſcience muſt be their text, their gloſſe, their ſanctuarie, their tenure, and their ſtrong hold. Indeede conſcience, grounded upon ſcience, is a double anchor, that neither deceiveth, nor is deceived; and no better rule then a regular or publique conſcience; in divinitie ruled by divinitie, in law by law, in art by art, in reaſon by reaſon, in experience by experience. Other irregular or private conſcience, in publique functions, will fall-out to be

but a lawlesse Church, a ship-mans hofe, a jugglers sticke, a phantasticall freehold, and a conceited tenure *in capite*, as interchaungeable as the moone, and as fallible as the winde. How barratous and mutinous at every puffe of suggestion, lett the world judge. I would there lacked a present example, as hoat, as fresh; but hoat loove soone cold, and the fittes of youth like the showers of Aprill. There goeth a prettie Fable of the Moone, that on a time she earnestly befought her moother to provide her a comely garment, fitt and handsome for her boddy: How can that be, sweet daughter (quoth the moother) sith your body never keepeth at one certaine state, but changeth every day in the moneth? That private conscience, the sweet daughter of Phanisie, be the morall; and the assurance of the common people, where there wanteth a curbe, the application. What chameleon so chaungeth his colour as affection? or what polypus so variable as *populus, chorus, fluxius*? Doctour Kelke, when he was vicechauncelour in Cambridge, would often tell the advocats and proctours in the consistorie there, that he had a knacke of conscience for their knacke of law. Truly the man, as he was knowen to be learned and religious, so seemed to carrie a right-honest and harmelesse minde, and would many times be pleasantly disposed after his blunt manner; but in very deede his conscience (be it spoken without appeachment of his good memorie) other-whiles proved a knacke, and admitted more inconveniences, (some would have sayd, committed more absurdities) then became the gravitie and reputation of that judicious consistorie. Yet were this new-plotted consistorie erected according to the map of their owne imagination, even upon the topp of the presumed Mount Sion, by the favour of that goodly

prospect I dare undertake, amongst so many thousand ministers with episcopall or more then episcopall autoritie, there must be but a few hundred judges, like Doctour Kelke; and a very great dearth of such assistants, or seniours, as that flourishing universitie affourdeth. Alas! many thousands of them unworthie to carrie the beadles staffe before the one, or their bookes after the other: how meete for supreme, or free jurisdiction, I report me unto you. It is notably sayd of Aristotle, in his politiques, He that would have the lawe to rule, would have a God to rule; but he that committeth the rule to a man, committeth the rule to a beast. The lawe is a mynde without appetite, a soule without a boddy, a judge without fleshe and bloud, a ballance without partialitie, a meane without extreames. Where conscience is such a law, I am for conscience; let us professe no other law, let us build us consistories and tabernacles upon that hill of equitie; let us dwell in those Elisian fields of integritie; let us honour that incorruptible scepter of sinceritie; let us set the imperiall crowne upon the head of that pollicie, and let that discipline weare the pontificall miter. The world wrongeth itselfe infinitely, if it runneth not to the gaze of that bewtifull *Belvedere*, or refuseth any order from that sacred oracle. Otherwise, if men be men, and that consistory no quire of angels, or tribunall of saints, but a meeting of neighbours, some of them rude and grosse enough after the homelyest guise, (for without miraculous illumination it must necessarily be so in most parishes) now I beseech you, hath not consideration some reason to feare the delphical sword? And the convented partie, that was nothing affrayde of the deane or the canons; they, quoth he, are good gentlemen, and my favourable frendes, but the

chapter is the divell ; would, peradventure, go nigh-hand to say asmuch for the new consistorie as for the old chapter. Our minister is a zealous preacher, and such and such my honest neighbours ; but God blesse me from the curst consistorie. They that can skill of popular humours, and know the course of mechanicall dealinges, or artisan governments, or what you please, can hardly hope for any such Paradise, or All-hallowes in Hoony-lane, as is plaufiblie portrayed in some late drawghts of reformation, sweeter in discourse then in practise. I will not prophesie of contingents in speculation, but were their complot a matter *in esse*, it is possible that even the platformers themselves should have no such exceeding cause to joye in their redoubted seniours. Some potestats are queint men, and will by fittes beare a braine, maugre the best reason, or purest conscience in a consistorie ; and God knoweth how the people would digest it, (especially after some little triall of their inexorable rigour, and other furly dealing) that their neighbour Whatchicall, sometime no wiser then his fellowes, and such and such a free-holder of this and that homely occupation (somewhat base for a senatour), should so jollily perke on the bench, amongst the fathers conscript, when some, that have a state of inheritance, or maintaine themselves upon civiler trades, must humbly wait at the barre, and yeeld themselves obedient to the sterne commandements of those sage benchers. Twis, the penny is a stronge argument with such natures ; and he that carrieth the heaviest purse, how unmeete soever he may seeme for a consistorie, thinketh himselfe mightily wronged, unlesse he be taken for the best, or one of the best, in the parish : and if for his countenance, or other charitable respect, he will not sticke sometime to

pleasure a good fellow, or a poore neighbour (some good fellowes are killcowes, and some poore neighbours all-hart), he may perhaps get som hardy partakers and bare himselfe for as mighty a man in the borrowgh, or village, as some of the foresaid redoubted potestaft. How that would be allowed in consistorie, or how a thousand suites, quarrels, uprores, and hurliburlyes, might be pacified, yet unprovided-for or unthought upon by the compendious summiſts, it would be considered in time, whiles there is leysure from practiſe. For, after the consistorie is once up, in ſuch sweating harveſt of moſt-buſie buſineſſe, a ſimple pragmatique may eaſely prognosticate how ſmall a remnant of leysure will remaine for conſideration. There was much adoee, and otherwhiles little helpe, firſt at Jeruſalem, with one Synedrion; and then at Geneva, with one Seniorie, the two onely exemplary Presbiteryes (for other primitive elderſhips wil not fit the turne) what a wonderfull ſturre would one, and ſome 52,000 conſiſtories make in England? Were not our Reformation likely to proove a greater ſweat, or a mightier drowt then any in Graſtons, Stowes, or Holinſheds Chronicle? Martin, under correſtion of your High Court of Conſcience, give me leave to bethinke me attonce, upon the fierworke of your diſcipline, and Phaetons regiment in the hoat countryes of the Orient. When his brave deſeigne came to the execution, *ſolitaque jugum gravitate carbat*,—a light beginning, a heavie ending.

Nec ſcit, quâ ſit iter; nec ſi ſciat, imperet illis,

And ſo forth; (it is not conceit, or courage, but ſkill and authoritie, that manageth governement with honour.) What was the iſſue of that yonkerly and preſumptuous enterpriſe,

but a diluge of fier, as ruthfull and horrible as Deucalions diluge of water?

*Magnæ percunt cum mænibus Urbes :
Cumque suis totas populis incendia gentes
In cinerem vertunt.*

You can best translate it yourselfe; and I leave the warme application to the hoat interpreter, with addition of that short, but weightie and most remarkable advertisement,

Pænam, Phaeton, pro munere poscis ;

Phaeton, thou desirest thy ruine for thy aduancement; and Martin, thou affectest thou knowest not what: a discipline? a confusion: a reformation? a deformation: a salve? a plague: a blisse? a curse: a commonwealth? a common-wo: a happy and heavenly church? a wretched and hellish synagoge. Amount in imagination as high as the hawtiest conceit can aspire, and platforme the most exquisite designs of pure perfection that the nicest curiositie can devise, were not the wisest on your side, most simplie simple, in weying the consequents of such antecedents, they would never so inconsideratly labour their owne shame, the miserie of their brethren, the desolation of the ministry, and the destruction of the Church. Good Martin, be good to the Church, to the ministry, to the state, to thy country, to thy patrons, to thy frends, to thy brethren, to thifelse; and, as thou loovest thifelse, take heede of old puritanisme, new anabaptisme, and final barbarisme. Thou art young in yeares, I suppose; but younger in enterprife, I am assured; thy age in some sort pleadeth thy pardon, and couldest thou, with any reasonablenesse, advise thifelse in time, as

it is high time to assuage thy stomachous and overlashing outrage, there be fewe wise men of qualitie but would pittie thy rash proceeding, and impute thy wanton scurrileous veine to want of experience and judgement, which is feldome ripe in the spring. I will not stand to examine the spirite that speaketh or endighteth in such a phraze; but if that were the tenour of a godly, or zealous, stile, methinkes some other sainct, or godly man, should someway have used the like elocution before; unlesse you meant to be as singular in your forme of writing as in your manner of censuring, and to publish as grave an innovation in wordes as in other matters. Some spirituall motion it was that caused you so sensible to applie your ruffling speach, and whole method, to the feeding and tickling of that humour, that is none of the greatest students of divinitie, unlesse it be your divinitie; nor any of the likeliest creatures to advaunce reformation, unlesse it be your reformation. But whatsoever your motion were, or howsoever you perswaded yourselfe, that a plausible and roisterly course would winne the harts of good fellows, and make ruffians become precisians, in hope to mount higher then Highgate by the fall of Bishopsgate, some of your wellwillers hold a certaine charitable opinion, that to reforme yourselfe were your best reformation. Good discipline would doe many good, and doe Martin no harme; had he leysure from trayning of other to trayne himselfe, and, as one termed it, to trimme his owne beard. Howbeit, in my method knowledge would go before practise, and doctrine before discipline. I challenge fewe, or none, for learning, which I rather loove as my frend, or honour as my patron, then professe as my facultie; but some approved good schollars of both universities, and some honorable

wife-men of a higher universitie take Martin to be none of the greatest clarkes in England, and marvell how he should presume to be a doctour of discipline, that hath much adoe to shewe himselfe a master of doctrine. For mine owne part, I hope he is a better doctrinist then disciplinist, or else, I must needs conclude, pride is a busie man, and a deeper counsellour of states then of himselfe. Publique projectes become publique persons, and may doe well in some other, being well employed ; but private persons, and the common crewes of platformers, might have most use of private designements, appropriat to their owne vocation, profession, or qualitie. When I finde Martin as neat a reformer of his owne life, as of other mens actions, it shal go hard but I will, in som measure, proportion my commendation to the singularity of his desert, which I would be glad to crowne with a garland of present and a diademe of future prayse ; for I long to see a larke without a creast, and would travaile farre to discoover a reformer without a fault, or onely with such a fault as for the rarenesse should deserve, or for the strangenesse might challenge, to be chronicled, like the eclipse of the sunne. The state demonstrative, not overlaboured at this instant, would fayne be employed in blasoning a creature of such perfections, and the very foule of charitie thirsteth to drinke of that cleere *Aqua Vitæ*. It is not the first time that I have preferred a gentleman of deedes before a lord of wordes : and what if I once, by way of familiar discourse, sayd I was a Protestant in the antecedent, but a Papist in the consequent, for I liked faith in the premisses, but wished works in the conclusion : as S. Paul beginneth with justification, but endeth with sanctification, and the schoolemen reconcile many confutations in one

distinction. We are justified by faith apprehensively, by workes declaratively, by the blood of Christ effectively. I hope it is no evill signe for the flower to flourish, for the tree to fructifie, for the fier to warme, for the sunne to shine, for truth to embrace vertue, for the intellectuall good to practife the morall good, for the cause to effect. He meant honestly that said merrily, he tooke S. Austins and S. Gregories by Pauls, to be the good frendes of S. Faithes under Paulus. What needeth more? If your reformation be such a restorative as you pretende, what letteth but the world should presently behold a visible difference betweene the fruites of the pure and the corrupt diet? Why ceaseth the heavenly discipline to penne her owne apologie, not in one or two scribbled pamphlets of counterfait complements, but in a thousand living volumes of heavenly vertues? Divine causes were ever wont to fortifie themselves, and weaken their adversaries with divine effectes as conspicuous as the brightest sunne-shine. The Apostles and primitive founders of Churches were no railers or scoffers, but painfull travellers, but zelous preachers, but holly livers, but fayre-spoken, mild, and looving men, even like Moses, like David, like the sonne of David; the three gentlest persons that ever walked upon earth. Wheresoever they became it appeared by the whole manner of their meeke and sweet proceeding, that they had bene the servants of a meeke lord, and the disciples of a sweet master: in somuch, that many nations, which knew not God, interteined them as the ambassadours, or oratours of some God; and were mightily perswaded to conceive a divine opinion of him, whom they so divinely preached, and even to beleieve that he could be no lesse then the sonne of the great God. Their miracles

got the harts of numbers ; but their sermons and orations were greater wonders then their miracles, and woon more ravished soules to heaven. Their doctrine was full of power ; their discipline full of charitie ; their eloquence celestially ; their zeale invincible ; their life inviolable ; their conversation looving ; their profession humilitie ; their practice humilitie ; their conquest humilitie. Read the sweet ecclesiasticall hystories, replenished with many cordiall narrations of their soverain vertues ; and peruse the most rigorous censures of their professed enemies, Plinie, Suetonius, Tacitus, Antoninus, Symachus, Lucian, Libanius, Philostratus, Eunapius, or any like Latinist or Grecian (I except not Porphyrie, Hierocles, or Julian himselfe), and what Christian, or heathen judgment, with any indifferencie can denie but they alwayes demeaned themselves like well-affected, faire-conditioned, innocent, and kinde persons ; many wayes gracious, and some wayes admirable ? Peace was their warre ; unitie their multiplication ; good wordes, and good deedes, their edifying instruments ; a generall humanitie toward all, wheresoever they travailed, and a speciall beneficence toward every one with whom they conversed, one of their soverrain meanes for the propagation of Christianitie. They knew his mercifull and Godfull meaning, that in an infinite and incomprehensible loove descended from heaven to save all upon earth ; and remembred how gratioously his divine selfe voutfaved to converse with publicans and other sinners ; what a sweet and peerlesse example of humblest humilitie he gave his disciples, when with his owne immaculate handes he washed their feete ; how applyably he framed himselfe to the proper disposition of every nation, in drawing unto him the Magicians of the East, with

the wondrous sight of a new starre; in mooving the Jewes with miracles and parables, in showing himselfe a prophet, and the very Messias to the Samaritans; in sending eloquent Paule to the eloquent Grecians; zealous Peter to the devout Hebrues and vertuous Romans; his brother Andrew to the stout Scythions; incredulous Thomas to the infidell Parthians, and so forth: what a looving and precious deare Testament he left behinde him, and with how unspeakable favour he bequeathed and disposed the rich hereditaments, and inestimable gooddes of his kingdome; how neerly it concerned the members of one boddy, without the least intestine disagreement or faction, to tender and cherish one another with mutuall indulgence; how frutelessly the militant Church had already encreased by concord, like a plant of the triumphant Church, whose blissefull consort incomparably passeth the sweetest harmonie. The effect of such divine motions was heavenly; and whiles that celestiall course continued, with an inviolable consent of united mindes, even in some diffension of opinions (for there was ever some difference in opinions) the Gospell reigned, and the Church flourished miraculously. It would make the hart of pietie to weepe, for joyfull compassion, to remember how the bloud of those, and those most patient, but more glorious martyrs, that might be slaine but not vanquished, was the seede of the Church. The Church, that grew victorious and mightie by the beheading of Paule and James; by the crucifying of Peter, Andrew, Philip, and Simon; by the stoning of Stephen; by the burning of Marke and Barnabas; by the slaying of Bartholomew; by the murdering of Thomas with a dart, of Mathew with a sword, of Matthias with an axe, of James Alphæus with a club; of how many renowned

martyrs, with how many cruell and tyrannicall torments, immortall monuments of their invincible faith and most honorable constancie. When asperitie and discorde, degenerating from that primitive order, tooke an other course, and began to proceede, more like furies of hell then saincts of the Church, or honest neighbours of the world, alas ! what followed ? And unlesse we retire to our principles, although mischief upon mischief be bad enough, yet ruine upon ruine will be worse. It is not a ruffianly stile, or a tumultuous plot, that will amend the matter ; some apostolicall vertues would doe well, and that same evangelicall humilitie were much-worth. In the meane season, fuerly reverend bishops and learned doctours, albeit corruptible men, should be meeter to administer or governe churches then lustie cutters, or insufficient plotters, albeit reformed creatures. Sweet Martin, aswell junior as senior, (for juniours and seniours are all one, as old Master Raye sayd in his maioraltie,) and you sweet whirlwindes, that so fiercely besturr you at this instant, now, agayne and agayne I beseech you, either be content to take a sweeter course, or take all for me. My interest in these causes is small, and howsoever some busie heades loove to set themselves aworke, yet by their favours there is a certaine thing that passeth all understanding, which I commend universally unto all, especially unto my frends, and singularly unto miselfe : *Nulla salus bello : pacem te poscimus omnes*. No law to the Feціаль Law, nor any conquest to pacification. Would Christ, reformation could be entreated to begin at itelfe ; and discipline would be so good as to shew by example of her owne house, where she inhabiteth and conforteth, what a precious and heavenly thing it were for a whole kingdome to live in such a celestiall

harmony of pure vertues and all perfections! Theoricks and ideas are quickly imagined in an aspiring phantasie; but an inviolable practise of a divine excellencie in humane frailtie, without exceſſe, defect or abuſe, doubtleſſe were a chriſtall worth the ſeeing, and a glorious mirrour of eternall imitation. When contemplation hath a little more experience, it ſhall finde that action is ſcantly ſo ſmooth and nimble a creature as ſpeculation; two notable preſidents *in concreto*, more rare then twentieth ſingular types *in abſtracto*: they that ſhoote beyonde the marke in imagination, come ſhort in tryall: good intentions were never too-riſe, and the beſt intentions have gone aſtray. All men are not of one mould, there is as great difference of miniſters and aldermen as of other perſons: even where the ſpirite is ſtrong, the fleſhe is ſometime founde weake enough; and the world is a world of temptations, murmurings, offences, quarrels, treſpaſſes, crimes, and continuall troubles in one ſort or other.

If the preciſeſt and moſt ſcrupulous treatiſes have much adoee to uphold the credit of any perfection, or eſtimation with their owne aſſociats (how many heads, ſo many plottes) what may reaſon conceive of the aſſurance or maturitie of their judiciall, or other morall proceedings *in effe*? When his and his ſcripture, after ſome prettie pauſing, is become apocryphall with his and his owne adherents, whoſe writing was ſcripture with many of them, how can any of them aſcertaine or reſolve themſelves of the canonicall incorruption, or autenticall omnifufficiencie of his, or his actuall governement? When even he, that within theſe fewe yeares was alledged for text, hath ſo emproved his autoritie with a number of his ſerventeſt brethren, that he will now be

fcantly allowed for a current gloffe, why should defeated affection any longer delude itfelfe with a prejudicate and vayne imagination of an Alchimifticall difcipline, not fo fweet in conceit as fower in prooffe; and as defective in needfull prefumption, as exceffive in unneedfull prefumption? If fecond cogitations be riper and founder then the firft, may not third or fourth consultations take more and more advifement? If Bishops-gate be infected, is it unpoſſible for Alders-gate to be attainted? and if neither can be long cleere in an univerfall plague of corruption, what reaſon hath zeale to fly from Gods bleſſing into a warme funne? What a wifedome were it to chaunge for the worfe? or what a notorious follie were it to innovate without infallible affurance of the better? What politique ſtate, or confiderate people, ever laboured any alteration, civill or eccleſiaſticall, without pregnant evidence of ſome ſingular or notable good, as certaine in conſequence, as important in eſtimation? To be ſhort, (for I have already bene over-long, and ſhall hardly qualifie thoſe headdie younkens with any diſcourſe) had Martin his luſt, or Penry his wiſh, or Udal his mynde, or Browne his will, or Ket his phanſie, or Barrow his pleaſure, or Greenwood his harts-deſire, or the feeſheſt praſtitioners their longing, (even to be judges of the conſiſtorie, or fathers conſcript of the ſenate, or *Domine fac totum*, or themſelves wott not what) there might fall-out five hundred praſticable caſes, and a thouſand diſputable queſtions in a yeare (the world muſt be reframed anew, or ſuch points decided) wherewith they never diſquieted their braynes, and wherein the learnedeſt of them could not ſay A to the arches, or B to a battledore. If the graver motioners of diſcipline (who, no doubt, are learneders men, and

might be wiser, but M. Travers, M. Cartwright, Doctour Chapman, and all the grayer heads begin to be stale with these noovellists) have bethought themselves upon all cases, and cautels in practise, of whatsoever nature, and have thorowly provided against all possible mischiefs, inconveniences, and irregularities, aswell future as present, I am glad they come so well prepared: fuerly some of the earnestest and egrest sollicitours are not yet so furnished. Wordes are good fellowes and merry men; but in my poore opinion it were not amisse for some sweating and fierce dooers at this instant, that would downe with Clement and up with Hildebrand, either to know more at home, or to sturr lesse abroad. It is no trifling matter in a monarchie to hoise-up a new autoritie, like that of the Jewish Consistorie above kinges, or that of the Lacedemonian Ephoric above tyrants, or that of the Romane Senate above emperours. Howbeit, if there be no remedie, but M. Fier must be the pastour, M. Aier the doctour, goodman Water the deacon, and goodman Earth the aldermen of the Church, let the young calfe and the old asse draw cuttes, whither of their heads shall weare the garland. And thus much in generalitie touching Martinizing; being urged to defend it if I durst, but for feare of indignation I durst not. The severall particularities and more gingerly nicities of rites, signes, termes, and what not, I referre to the discussion of professed devines, or reserve for more leysure and fitter occasion.

As for that new-created spirite, whom double V, like an other doctour Faustus, threateneth to conjure up at leysure (for I must returne to the terrible creature that subscribeth himselfe Martins double V, and will needes also be my tittle-

tittle) were that spirite disposed to appeare in his former likenesse, and to put the necromancer to his purgation, he could peradventure make the conjuring wizzard forsake the center of his circle, and betake him to the circumference of his heeles. Simple creature! iwis thou art too-young an artist *to conjure him* up that can exorcise thee downe; or to *lamback him* with *ten yeares* preparation, that can lamskin thee with a dayes warning. Out upon thee for a cowardly lambacker, that stealest-in at the backe doore, and thinkest to filch advantage on the back-wing! knaves are back-biters, whores bellybiters, and both sheepebiters. Pedomancie fitter for such conjurers, then either chiromancie, necromancie, or any familiar spirite, but contempt. It is some-boddies fortune to be haunted with backfrendes; and I could report a straunge dialogue betwixt the clarke of Backchurch, and the chaunter of Pancridge, that would make the better vifard of the two to blush: but I favour modeste eares, and a thousand honest tongues will justifie it to thy face. Thou art as it were a grose idiot, and a very *Asse in presenti*, to imagine that thou couldest go scotfree in this sawcy reckoning, although the partie conjured should say nothing but Mum. Honestie goeth never unbacked, and truth is a sufficient patron to itselfe; and I know one, that hath written a pamphlet, intituled *Cock-Alilly*, or *The white son of the Black Art*. But he that can *massacre Martins wit* (thou remembrest thine owne phraze) can rott Pat-hatchets braine; and he that can *tickle Mar-prelate with taunts*, can twitch double V. to the quicke, albeit he threaten no lesse then the siege of Troye in his note-booke, and his penne refounde like the harnessed woombe of the Trojan horse. I have scene a broad sword stand at the

doore, when a poinardo hath entered ; and although I am neither Ulysses nor Outis, yet perhaps I can tell, how nobody may doe that some boddy cannot doe. Polyphemus was a mightie fellow, and conjured Ulysses companions into excrements (fewe giants ever so hideous as Polyphe-mus) but poore Outis was even with him, and no-boddy conjured his goggle eye as well. I prey thee, sweet Pap, insult not over much upon quiet men : though my penne be no-boddy at a hatchet, and my tongue lesse then no-boddy at a beetle, yet patience looveth not to be made a cart of Croiden ; and no such libbard for a lively ape as fordead silence. The merry gentleman deviseth to disport himselfe, and his copesmates, with a pleasurable conceit of *quaking cares* ; and *all my workes, at least six sheetes in quarto, called by miselfe, the first tome of my familiar Epistle[s]* : two impudent lyes, and so known notoriously ! He might as truly forge any lewd, or villanous report of any man in England ; and for his labour challenge to be preferred to the clarkship of the Whetstone, which he is hable to maintaine sumptuously with a mint of queint and uncouth similes, daintie monsters of nature. I must deale plainly with the spawne of ranke calummie : his knavish and foolish malice palpably bewrayeth it self in most odious fictions, meet to garnish the foresayd famous office of the Whetstone. But what sayth his owne couragious penne of his owne adventurous eares ? *If ripping up of lives make sport, have with thee knuckle deepe : it shal never be sayd that I dare not venter myne eares, where Martin hazards his necke.* Some men are not so prodigall of their eares, how lavish foever Martin may seeme of his necke ; and albeit every man cannot compile such ground volumes as Euphues,

or reare such mightie tomes as Pap-hatchet ; yet he might have thought other poore men have tongues and pennes to speake something, when they are provoked unreasonably. But loofers may have their wordes, and comedians their actes : such drie bobbers can lustely strike at other, and cunningly rapp themselves. He hath not played the vice-master of Poules, and the foolemaster of the theater for naughtes : himselfe a mad lad as ever twangd, never troubled with any substance of witt, or circumstance of honestie, sometime the fiddle-sticke of Oxford, now the very bable of London, would fayne forfooth have some other esteemed, as all men value him. A workeman is easely descried by his termes : every man speaketh according to his art : I am threatened with a bable, and Martin menaced with a comedie ; a fit motion for a jester, and a player, to try what may be done by employment of his facultie : bables and comedies are parlous fellows *to decipher, and discourage men* (that is the point) with their wittie flowtes and learned jerkes, enough to lash any man out of countenance. Na, if you shake the painted scabbard at me, I have done ; and all you that tender the preservation of your good names, were best to please Pap-hatchet, and see Euphues betimes, for feare lesse he be mooved, or some one of his apes hired, to make a playe of you ; and then is your credit quite undone for ever and ever : such is the publique reputation of their playes. He must needes *be discouraged*, whom they *decipher*. Better anger an hundred other, then two such, that have the stage at commaundement, and can furnish out vices and divels at their pleasure. Gentlemen, beware of a *chafing penne, that swcateth out whole realmes of paper*, and whole theaters of jestes : tis aventure, if he dye not of

the paper-sweat, should he chaunce to be never so litle overchafed ; for the jest-dropfie is not so peremptorie. But no point of cunning to the *Tale of the Tubb* : that is the profounde mysterie, and the very secret of secrets. The sweet sisters answer, *that in her conscience thought lecherie the superficies of sinne*, (a rare word with women, but by her answer she should seeme to be learned) : the true tale of one of Martins godly sonnes, *that having the companie of one of his sisters in the open fieldes, said he would not smoothe up sinne, and deale in hugger-mugger against his conscience* : (the historiographer hath many privie intelligences) : the sober tale of the *eldest Elder, that received fortie Angels at his Table, where he sat with no lesse then fortie good dishes of the greatest dainties, in more pompe then a Pope* : (he was not of the starved Pythagorean or Platonicall diet, but liberall exhibition may maintaine good hospitalitie) : the zelous *Loove-letter, or Corinthian Epistle to the widow, as honest a woman as ever burnt malt* : (the wooer, or the register of Aretines religion) : *the holie othe of the Martinist, that thinking to sweare by his conscience, swore by his concupiscence* : (did not he forget himselfe, that expressly affirmed, *Martin will not sweare ; but with Indeepe, In sooth, and In truth, hele cogg the dye of deceit* ?) these, and the rest of those bawdie inventions, wherewith that brothelish pamphlet floweth, smell somewhat strongly of the pumpe, and shewe the credibilitie of the autor, that dareth alledge any impudent, prophane, or blasphemous fiction to serve his turne. So he may soone make-up the autenticall legendary of his *Hundred merrie Tales* ; as true, peradventure, as Lucians true narrations ; or the heroicall historyes of Rabelais ; or the brave Legendes of errant knights ; or

the egregious pranks of Howleglasse, Frier Ruff, Frier Tuck, and such like ; or the renowned *Bugiale* of Poggius, Racellus, Lufcus, Cincius, and that whole Italian crew of merry Secretaryes in the time of Pope Martin the fift ; of whom our worshipfull Clarkes of the Whetstone, Doctour Clare, Doctour Bourne, M. Scoggin, M. Skelton, M. Wakefield, divers late historiologers, and haply this new tale-founder himfelfe, learned their most wonder-full facultie. *Committing of matrimonie ; carousing the sapp of the Church ; cutting at the bumme carde of conscience ; befmeasuring of conscience ; spelling of Our Father in a horne booke ; the railing religion ;* and a whole finke of such arrant phrafes, favour whotly of the same Lucianicall breath, and difcover the minion Secretarie aloofe. Faith ! quoth himfelfe, thou wilt be caught by thy stile : indeede what more easie then to finde the man by his humour, the Midas by his eares, the calfe by his tongue, the goose by his quill, the play-maker by his stile, the hatchet by the pap ? Albertus secrets, Poggius fables, Bebelius jestes, Scoggins tales, Wakefields lyes, Parson Darcyes knaveries, Tarletons trickes, Eldertons ballats, Greenes pamphlets, Euphues similes, double Vs phrafes, are too well knownen to go unknownen. Where the Veine of Braggadocio is famous, the arterie of Pappadocio cannot be obfcure. Gentlemen, I have given you a taft of his fugerloafe, that weeneth Sidneyes daintyes, Afchams confites, Cheekes fuccats, Smithes conferves, and Mores junkets, nothing comparable to his pap. Some of you dreamed of electuaryes of gemmes, and other precious reftoratives ; of the quinteffence of amber, and pearle difsolved, of I wott not what incredible delicacies ; but his gemmemint is not alwayes current ; and as bufie men, fo

painted boxes, and gallipots must have a vacation. Yet
 wellfare the sweet hart of Dia-pap, Dia-fig, and Dia-nut,
 three soveraine defensatives of the commonwealth, and
 three cordiall comfortatives of the Church. It is a good
 hearing, when good fellowes have a care of the common-
 wealth and the Church; and a godly motion, when inter-
 luders leave penning their pleasurable playes to become
 zealous ecclesiasticall writers. *Bona fide*, some have written
 notable against Martinisme (it were a busie taske for the
 crediblest Precisian to impeach the credit of Doctour Ban-
 croft, or Doctour Sutcliff); but this Mamma-day hath ex-
 cellently knocked himselfe on the scone with his owne
 hatchet. I will cast away no more inke upon a compoude
 of simples. The pap is like the hatchet; the fig like the
 nut; the country-cuff like the hangmans apron; the dog
 like the dog; John Anoke and John Astile like the baily
 of Withernam; the signe of the crabtre cudgell like twack-
 coate lane; Martins hanging like Pappadocios mowing;
 Huff, Ruff, and Snuffe, the three tame ruffians of the
 Church, like double V: never a laye in the barrell better
 herring: the beginning, the midst, and the end, all in one
 pickle. Some roses amongst prickles doe well; and some
 lillyes amongst thornes would have done no harme; but
 envie hath no fanisie to the rose of the garden, and what
 careth malice for the lilly of the valley? Would fayre
 names were spelles and charmes against fowle affections!
 and in some respectes I could wish that divinitie would give
 humanitie leave to conclude otherwise then I must. I could
 in curtesie be content, and in hope of reconciliation desirous,
 to mitigate the hardest sentences, and mollifie the hardest
 termes. But can truth lye, or discretion approve follic, or

judgement allowe vanitie, or modestie abide impudencie, or good manners sooth bad speaches? He that penned the abooke-mentioned *Cock-alilly* saw reason to display the Black Artift in his collier colours; and thought it most unreasonable to suffer such light and emptie vessels to make such a lowde and prowde rumbling in the ayre. Other had rather heare the learned nightingale then the unlearned parrat, or tast the wing of a larke then the legge of a raven. The finest wittes preferre the loofest period in M. Ascham, or Sir Philip Sidney, before the trickiest page in Euphues, or Pap-hatchet. The Muses shame to remember some freshe quaffers of Helicon, and, which of the Graces or Vertues blufheth not to name some lustie tospots of rhetoric? The stately tragedie scorneth the trifling comedie; and the trifling comedie flowteth the new ruffianisme. Wantonneffe was never such a swill-bowle of ribaldry, nor idleneffe ever such a carowfer of knaverie. What honest mynde, or civill disposition, is not accloied with these noisome and nasty gargarismes? Where is the polished and refined eloquence that was wont to bedeck and embellish humanity? Why should learning be a niggard of his excellent gifts, when impudencie is so prodigall of his rascall trish-traff? What daintie, or neat judgement beginneth not to hate his old loove, and loath his auncient delight, the presse, the most honorable presse, the most villanous presse? Who smileth not at those and those trim-trammes of gawdie wittes? how flourishhing wittes, how fading witts! Who laugheth not at *Ile, Ile, Ile*; or gibeth not at some hundred pibalde fooleryes, in that harebraind declamation? They whom it neerelyest pincheth, cannot silence their just disdaine; and I am forcibly urged to intimate my whole

censure, though without hatred to the person, or derogation from any his commendable gift, yet not without speciall dislike of the bad matter, and generall condemnation of the vile forme. The whole work a bald toy, full of stale and wooden jestes; and one of the most paltry thinges that ever was published by graduate of either universitie; good for nothing but to stop mustard pottes, or rub gridirons, or feather rattes neastes, or such like homely use. For stationers are already too full of such realmes and commonwealthes of wast paper; and finde more gaine in the lillypot blanke, then in the lillypot Euphued: a day or two fine for sheetes, and afterward good for grocers: *Vanitas vanitatum*, the some of grudge, the froth of levitie, the scum of corruption, and the very scurfe of rascallitie: nothing worthy a schollar, or a civill gentleman: altogether phantasticall and sonde, without ryme or reason; so odly hudled and bungled together, in so madbraine sort, and with so brainesicke stufte, that in an overflowe of so many frivolous and ridiculous pamphlets, I scarcely know any one in all points so incomparably vayne and absurde, whereunto I may resemble that most toyishe and piperly trifle, the fruite of an addle and lewd wit, long since dedicated to a dissolute and desperate licentiousnesse. Oh, what a *magnifico* would he be, were his purse as heavie as his head is light, and his hart franke! Even that same very Mirrour of Madnesse hangeth together with some more coherence of reason; and smelleth not so rankly of the taverne, the alehouse, the stewes, the cucking-stoole, or other such honest places, as that drunken and shamelesse declamation; unbeseeming any but an oratour of Bedlam, a rhetorician of Bridewell, or discourser of Prime-rose Hill. And although

that same French Mirrour be *ex professo* devised in a mad garish veyne, and stuffed with geere homely enough, fit for a libertine and frantique theame, yet doth it not so basely borrow of the ruffians bagge, the tapsters spigot, the pedlars pack, the tinkars bugget, the knaves trusse, and the roges fardle; unto all which, and other autors of like reputation, but chiefly to the hangmans apron, (that, that is the biggin of his wit,) this worthy autour is deeply beholding for great part of his fine conceits and dainty learning; precious ware for Euphued creatures and phantasticall colts, whose wild and mad-braine humour nothing fitteth so just as the stalest duden, or absurddest balductum, that they or their mates can invent, in odd and awke speeches, disguisedly shapen after the antick fashon, and monstrously thorne, like old Captaine Listers spannel. They that affect such ruffianish braveries, and devise their roisterdoistring jestes into cuttes, slashes and foines, may bestow the reading; for any other, of whatsoever qualitie, or calling, it will do them as much good as dirt in their shooes, or draffe in their bellyes: and, in good sooth, there is all the use, civill or ecclesiasticall, that I can finde of this babes papp; whom for his sweet interteinement with papp, figg, and nutt, I officiously recommede to the Ship of Fooles, and the Galeasse of Knaves. When he useth himselfe with more modestie, and his friendes with more discretion, I may alter my stile; (let him chaunge, and I am chaunged;) or if already he be ashamed of that conjuring leafe, foisted-in like a bum-carde, I have sayd nothing. Till he disclaimeth his injurie in print, or confesseth his oversight in writing, or signifieth his penitence in speech, the abused partie, that had reason to set-downe the premisses

without favour, hath cause to justifie his owne hand without feare; and is as well in equitie to avowe truth, as in charitie to disfavowe malice. At Trinitie Hall, this fift of November, 1589.

So then of Pappadocio, whom neverthelesse I esteeme a hundred times learned, and a thousand times honester then this other Braggadocio, that hath more learning then honestie, and more money then learning, although he truly intitule himselfe Pierce Penniles, and be elsewhere stiled the Gentleman Raggamuffin. Nash, the ape of Greene, Greene the ape of Euphues, Euphues the ape of Envie, the three famous mamnets of the presse, and my three notorious feudists, drawe all in a yoke: but some schollars excell their masters; and some lustie bloud will do more at a deadly pull, then two or three of his yoke fellowes. It must go hard, but he wil emprove himselfe the incomparable darling of immortall Vanitie. Howbeit, his frendes could have wished he had not shoven himselfe to the world such a ridiculous *suffenus*, or *shakerly* to himselfe, by advauncing the triumphall garland upon his owne head, before the least skermish for the victorie; which if he ever obtaine by any valiancie or bravure, (as he weeneth himselfe, the valiantest and bravest actour that ever managed penne) I am his bondman in fetters, and refuse not the humblest vassalage to the sole of his boote. Much may be done by close confederacie in all sorts of coosenage and legierdemane: *Monsieur Pontalais* in French, or *Messer Unico* in Italian, never devised such a nipping comedie as might be made in English, of some leagers in the queint practiques of the cros-

biting art : but I have seene many bearwardes and butchers in my time, and have heard of the one what belongeth to apes ; and have learned of the other not to be affrayde of a doosen horned beastes ; albeit some one of them should seeme as dreadfull as the furious dun cowe of Dunsmore Heath, the terriblest foman of Sir Guy. Æsops Oxe, though he be a fuer ploughman, is but a slowe workeman ; and Greenes Ape, though he be a nimble juggler, is no fuer executioner. Yet well-worth the master-ape and captaine-mammet, that had a hatchet aswell as Papp ; a country cuffe, aswell as a figge ; a crabtree cudgell, aswell as a nutt ; something of a mans-face with more of an apes-face. Had his pen bene muzled at the first, as his mouth hath bene bunged since, these fresh Euphuistes would never have adventured upon the whip, or the bobb ; but silence is a slave in a chaine, and patience the common pack-horse of the world. Even this brat, of an Apesclogge, that can but mowgh with his mouth, gnash with his teeth, quaver with his ten bones, and brandish his goose-quill, presuming of my former sufferance, layeth about him with the said quill, as if it were possessed with the sprite of *Orlando Furioso*, or would teach the clubb of Gargantua to speake English. For the flaile of *Ajax* distrawght, or the clubb of Hercules enraged, were but hedge-stakes of the old world, and unworth the naming in an age of puissance emproved horrible. The newest legendes of most hideous exploits may learne a new art to kill-cow men with peremptorie termes, and bugges-words of certaine death. Pore I must needes be plagued ; plagued ? na, brayed and squifed to nothing, that am matched with such a Gargantuist, as can devoure me quick in a fallat ; and thundreth more direfull threatnings

againſt me, that onely touched him, then huge Polyphemus rored againſt Ulyſſes, that blinded him; or banning Virgill reared againſt Arius, that ſpoiled him. *Genus irritabile vatum.* The generation of raving poets is a ſwarme of gad-bees; and the anger of a moodie rimeſter the furie of a waſpe. A mad tiger, not like a mad waſpe; and a chafed wildbore, not comparable to a chafed gad-bee. Take heede of the man whom nature hath marked with a gag-tooth, art furniſheth with a gag-tongue, and exerciſe armed with a gag-penne; as cruell and murderous weapons as ever drewe blood. The beſt is, who hath time hath life. He meaneth not to come upon me with a cowardly ſtratagemme of Scarborough warning; he uſeth a certaine gallant homericall figure, called *Hyſſeron-proteron*, or the cart before the horſe; and with a reſolution menaceth the effect, before the cauſes be begotten. When the iron cart is made, and the fierie horſes ſoled, they ſhall bring the mightie battring-ram of termes, and the great ordinance of miracles, to towne: aſke not, then, how he will plague me. In the meane ſeaſon, it is a woonder to ſee how courageouſly he taketh-on with his hoſtiffes needles, and his botchers bodkins. Indeede, a good ſouldiour will make a ſhrewd ſhift with any weapons; but it is a marvelous hart that threatneth ruine, ruine, ruine! with the dint of a bodkin and the blade of an awle. Where ſuch an other Rodomont, ſo furious, ſo valorous, ſo redoutable? There is a peece of a good old ſong, peradventure as auncient as the noble Legende of Syr Bevis, or Sir Launcelot du Lake,

*Dubba-dubba-dubb, kill him with a clubb:
And he will not dyc, kill him with a flyc.*

He that made that ryme in jest, little considered what a gad-fly may doe in earnest. It is small wisedome to contemne the smallest enemy; the gad-fly is a little creature, but some little creatures be stingers; never fauchon better managed then some tidy penneknives; and what will he do when he rusheth upon me with the tempestuous engins of his owne wit, that keepeth such a horrible coile with his schoole-fellowes poinado? An ape is never to seeke of a good face to set upon the matter. Blessed Euphues, thou onely happy, that hast a traine of such good countenances in thy flourishing greene-motley livery! miserable I, the unhappiest on earth, that am left desolate! Ah! but that might be endured; every man is not borne to be the leader of a bande; every birde carrieth not Argus eyes displayed in her taile; fame is not every boddies fainct. To be forsaken is no great matter; to be utterly undone is miserable. That, and the unmercifullest persecution that may be invented is cruelly proclaimed against quiet him that was once thronged and pestred with followers; but when he began to give over that greene haunt, and betooke himselfe to a riper profession, Diomedes companions were changed into birdes. Times alter; and as fortune hath more sectaries then vertue, so pleasure hath more adherents then profit: I had no sooner shaken of my young troupe, whom I could not associate as before, but they were festinatly reinterteined by some nimble wightes, that could take the advantage of opportunitie (with good visages you may be suer), and had purposely lyne in waite to climbe in print by the fall of their feniours; like ambitious planets, that enhaunse their owne dignities by the combustion, or retrogradation, of their fellow-planettes. Much good may that advancement doe them, and many

daintie webbs may I see of those fine spiders ! But although I dote upon curious workmanship, yet I loove not artificiall poyson ; and am almost angrie with the trimmest spinners, when they extort venom out of flowers, and will needes defile their friends libraries with those encroching cobwebbs. Iwis, it were purer Euphuisme to winne hooney out of the thistle, to sweeten aloë with sugar, to perfume the stinking agapenum with muske, and to mitigate the heat of euforbium with the juice of the lilly. Tush ! you are a silly humanitian of the old world ; that was the simplicitie of the age that loved frendship more then gold, and esteemed every thing fine that was neat and holesom : all was pure that was seasoned with a little salt, and all trimme that was besprinkled with a few flowers : now the fiercest gunpowder, and the rankest pikefawce, are the bravest figures of rhetorique *in esse*, and he the onely man at the scriveners pistoll, that will *so incessantlie haunt the civilian and devine, that, to avoide the hoat chase of his ferie quill, they shalbe constrained to enscorse themselves in an old urinall case*. Give me such a *Bonifacius*. Now well-worth some termes of *aqua fortis* at a pinch ! and wellcome urinall case, a fit sconse for such valiant termes, and a meete bulwarke against that ferie quill ! I have already felt his pulse, and cannot well cast his water without an urinall, either old or new ; but an old urinall will not so handsomly serve the turne : it would be as new as the capcase of Straunge Newes ; but *a pure mirrour* of an impure state ; *neither grose*, the clearer to represent a grose substance ; *nor green*, the livelier to expresse some greene colours, and other wanton accidents ; *nor any-way a harlot*, the trulyer to discoover the state of a harlatric. I have scene as hoat an agent made a tame patient, and

gladd to enconfe the dregges of his fhame in an old urinall. It is a blabb, but not every mans blabb, that caſteth a ſheepes eye out of a calves head; but a blabb with judgement; but a blabb that can make excrements bluſh, and teach Chawcer to retell a Canterbury Tale. But ſuch great judicials requier ſome little ſtuddie, and S. Fame is diſpoſed to make it a hallyday. She hath already put on her wiſpen garland over her powting cros-cloth, and behold! with what an imperiall majeſtie ſhe commeth riding in the ducking-chariot of her triumphe. I was never ſo ſicke of the milt, but I could laugh at him that would ſeeme a merry man, and cannot for his life keepe-in the breath of a ſumiſh foole. Phy! long Megg of Weſtminſter would have bene aſhamed to diſgrace her Sondag bonet with her Satterday witt. She knew ſome rules of decorum; and although ſhe were a luſtie, bounding rampe, ſomewhat like Gallemella or Maide Marian, yet was ſhe not ſuch a roiniſh rannell, or ſuch a diffolute gilian flurtes as this wainſcot-faced tomboy, that will needes be Danters Maulkin, and the only hagge of the preſſe. I was not wont to endight in this ſtile; but for terming his fellow Greene, as he was notoriously knowen, the ſcrivener of crosbiters, the ſounder of ugly othes, the greene maſter of the blacke art, the mocker of the ſimple world, *et cætera*, ſee how the daggletaild rampalion buſtleth for the frank-tenement of the dunghill. I confeſſe, I never knew my invective principles, or confuting termes, before; and perhaps ſome better ſcholiars are nigh-hand as farre to ſeeke in the kinde rudiments and proper phraſes of pure Naſherie. *Why, thou errant butter whore* (quoth he, or rather ſhe), *thou cotqueane and ſcrattope of ſcolds, wilt thou never leave afflicting a dead carcaſſe, continually read the*

rethorique lecture of Ramme Ally? A wisp, a wisp, a wisp! ripp, ripp, you kitchin-stuffe wrangler! Holla, Sir! sweeter wordes would do no harme. Doubtlesse these emphaticall termes of the Ally, were layd asleepe for some other acquaintance, not for me; (good fellowes must be furnished with oratorie, meete for their company) but it is some mens evill lucke to stumble in the way, when Will Summers weapon is ready drawen; and yet more possible for him to stay the swing of his eger hand, then for Maulkin to stay the dint of her moodie tongue, that can teach the storme-winde to scould English, and pleadeth naturall possession of the cuckingstoole. It is good pollicie to yeeld to the surie of the tempest; (the resoluteest harts are sayne to yeeld to the imperious jurisdiction of stormes and shrewes) and the stamping seind, in the hoat-house of her foming oratorie, will have the last word. Sweet gossip! disquiet not your loovely selfe; the dunghill is your freehold, and the cuckingstoole your copyhold: I know none so rank minded to enter upon your proper possessions, thy riot; and in case thou wilt needes also be the schoolemistris of Ramme Ally, certainly thou desirest but thy right, that canst read a rhetorique, or logique lecture to Hecuba in the art of raving, and instruct Tisiphone herselfe in her owne gnashing language. Other he, or she, drabs, of the curtest or vengeablest rankes, are but dipped or dyed in the art; not such a belldam in the whole kingdome of frogges, as thy croking, and most clamorous selfe. Even Martins unbrideled stile, and Pap-hatchets reastie eloquence, is but a curtaild jade to thy long-taild colt. Let the clocke strike: I have lost more howers, and loose nothing, if I finde equitie. Should the butterwhore besturre herselfe like an arrant knight, and

try all the conclusions of her cherne, she might peradventure in some sort pay thee home with schoolebutter ; but undoubtedly she should have much adoee to stoppe thy oven-mouth with a lidde of butter, that haft swapped downe a pounce of butter at a peece of a breakefast, or else there be lyes ; and art such a witch for a cherne, or a cheefepresse, as is not to be founde in the Mallet of Witches, or in Monsieur Bodines Dæmonomania. Three meales of a Lazarello make the fourth a Woolner ; and it is a craven frying-pan that is affrayde of a butterwhore. No, no ; the butterwhore is thy bondmaide in a bunch of keyes ; and take heede, fyrrha, the Cheefeknave be not her bondman in a load of logges. She commeth not of the bloud of the threateners, but kitchinstuffe, and a cole-rake have, in times past, bene of some familiar acquaintance ; and it is a badd paier of tongues that cannot make as good sport at a pinch as a paier of bellows. Though a dish of buttered pease be no great warriour, yet a messe of buttered artichokes may perhaps hold you some prettie tacke. Onely I barre thoffame hoursonne unlawfull termes, steeped in cisternes of *aqua fortis* and gunpowder : and have at you a gentle crash, when it shall please the urinall and the dairy to give me leave to play with a butter-fly. I doe you the uttermost credit in the world, that am ever glad to seeke dilatorie excufes, and to crave a terme *ad deliberandum*. The fortune of the field, with pike, or penne, is like the lucke of navigation, or the hap of marriage ; and I loove not greatly to chopp upon maine chaunces. Nothing venture, nothing loofe ; none of the worst rules, or cautels for their securitie, that can tell storyes of hap-hazard, and have knowen some gallants more hardie then wife. Humanitie is desirous of

peace with the best, and of truce with the worst ; and truly I never longed to fight it out with flat strokes, untill I must needesly needes : but if there be no remedy by treatie, or amicable composition, although I was ever a sloweworme in the morning, yet I cannot abide to go to bedd with a dromedarie. I cannot marvell enough how the nimble bee should be ingendred of the sluggish oxe, or the lively waspe of the dead horse ; but nature is a miraculous and omnipotent workeman, and I finde it true by experience that I must learne to imitate by example, or prejudice myselfe by favouring other. To prejudice were a small matter, where the partie levelleth at no great matter ; but when a mans credit is assaulted with bugges-words, and his witt beleaguered with the ever-playing shott of the presse, wife-dome must pardon him whom follie assaileth, and humanitie dispense with a necessary apologie. I would I might make it a pollicie to make my aduersarie much, and much, and much better then he is ; that I might reencounter him with the more reputation, or the lesse disparagement ; but it is his glory to shame himselfe notoriously, and he will needes proclaime his owne vanities in a thousand sentences and whole volumes of ribaldry, not to be read but upon a muck-hill, or in the privyest privie of the Bordello. Let his vices sleepe on a downe pillow ; would I could awaken his vertues, and stopp their mouthes that wish me, in sober earnest, not to foile my hands upon such a contemptible rascall, but to let the reckles villain play with his own shaddow : (truth is is my witnesse, divers honest men of good reckoning, and sundry worshipfull gentlemen have advised me in those very termes exprefly) but sithence I can doe him no good by perswasion, it were follie to suffer him to doe me harme

by detraction. You that are not ascertained of the lewd and vile disposition of the man imagin as favorably of him as charitie can possibly conceive of an impudent railer and a prophane mouth ; but you that can skill of learning and loove schollership give him his desert ; do equitie right and him no wrong, that wrongeth whom he listeth. They that have leysure to cast-away (who hath not some idle howers to loose?) may peruse his guegawes with indifferency, and finde no arte but Euphuisme ; no witt but Tarletonisme ; no honesty, but pure Scrogginisme ; no religion, but precise Marlowisme ; no consideration, but meere Nashery ; in brieve, no substance but light feathers ; no accidents but lighter colours ; no transcendents but lightest phantasies, that fly above the highest region of the cloudes, and purpose to have a saying to the man in the moone. His mountaines of imagination are too-apparent ; his designements of vanitie too-visible ; his plots of ribaldry too-palpable ; his formes of libelling too-outrageous : S. Fame, the goddesse of his devotion ; S. Blase, the idoll of his zeale ; S. Awdry the lady of his love, and the young vicar of old S. Fooles his ghostly father. I have heard of many notable prowde fooles, read of many egregious aspiring fooles, scene many hautie vayneglorious fooles, woondred at many busie tumultuous fooles ; but never sawe such a famous arrogant conceited foole, the very transcendent foole of the ship, that hugely contemneth all the world but his owne flimflams ; and against all pollicie, maketh his adverfary more then an asse, and lesse then nothing ; whose victory otherwise mought peradventure have seemed something. But to overcrow an asse is a fory conquest, and a miserable trophy for so douty a squier. There were wayes enough of aunswearing, or

confuting with varietie and reason; to his owne credite, the fatisfaction of other, and my contentment; although hee had not desperately and scurrilously broken-out into the fowleſt and filthieſt ſcurfe of odious termes that villany could invent, or impudency utter. Iwis, hee mought have ſpied a difference betweene ſtaring and ſtarke-blinde; betweene raging and ſtarke-madd; betweene confuting and rancke rayling in the groſſeſt fort. Had hee ſeaſoned his ſtile with the leaſt ſpice of diſcretion, or tempered his unmeaſurable licentiousneſſe with any moderation in the world, or hadd hee not moſt arrantly laboured to ſhew himſelfe the very braſen ſorhead of impudency, and the iron mouth of malediction, without all reſpect, he mought eaſily have found me the calmeſt and tractableſt adverſary that ever he provoked; as reaſonable for him as for miſelfe in cauſes of equity, and as partiall to foe as to freend in controverſies of trueth. But it is the topp-gallant of his braveſt bravure, to be a creator of aſſes, a confuter of aſſes, and a conquerour of aſſes; aſſes are borne to beare and birdes to ſoare aloft. No winges to the winges of ſelf-conceit, nor any failes to the failes of wordes; but hagar winges are ſometimes clipped, and hoieſed fayles oftentymes humbled. Wordes amount, like caſtels of vapours or pillars of ſmoke, that make a mighty ſhowe in the aier and ſtraight vaniſh-away. Howbeit, envie is a ſoking register, and ſpite a remembrancer of truſt. That would be written in a glaſſe of wine is otherwhiles founde in tables of marble, and indentures of wainſcot. The oſtridge can devoure the ruſt of iron, and the gall of preſent obloquy may be brucked; but the note-booke of malice is a monument of tuch-ſtone, and the memoriall of feude the clawe of an adamant. Pride ſwelleth

in the penne of arrogancy ; vanitie bubbleth in the mouth of folly ; rancour boileth in the hart of vengeance ; mischief hammereth in the head of villany, and no such art memorative as a crabtree deske. But in contempt of pride, I will speake one prowde word : vaine Nash, whom all posterity shall call vaine Nash, were thou the wifest man in England, thou wouldest not, or were thou the valiantest man in England, thou durst not have written as thou hast desperately written according to thy greene witt ; but thou art the boldest Bayard in print, a hare-braind foole in thy head, a vile swad in thy hart, a fowle lyer in thy throate, and a vaine-glorious affe in thy pen, as I will proove upon the carkasse of thy wit and carriage through-out all the predicaments of proofe. I hate malice in myselfe, but loove not to be an upholster of stuffed and bombasted malice in other. And bicaufe thou termest me an old fencer, (indeede I was once Tom Burleys schollar) and needest displing as much as any rake-hell in England, wherefoever I meete thee next, after my first knowledge of thy person, (not for mine owne revenge, but for thy correction) I will make thee a simple foole, and a double swad, aswell with my hand as with my tongue ; and will engrave such an epitaph with such a Kyrieellefon upon thy scull, as shall make thee remembered when Syr Gawins scull shall be forgotten. Some bibber of Helicon will deeme it worth eternall record ; and if thou entreate me not the fayrer (hope of amendment preventeth many ruines) trust me, I will batter thy carrion to dirt whence thou camst, and squise thy braine to snivell whereof it was curdled ; na, before I leave poudring thee, I will make thee sweare thy father was a ropemaker, and proclaime thifselfe the basest drudge of the presse ; with such

a straunge confutation of thine owne Straunge Newes, as shall bring Sir Vainglory on his knees, and make Master Impudency blush like a virgin. Thy witt already maketh buttons ; but I must have S. Fame disclaime her blacke *Sanctus*, and Nashes devout supplication to God to forgive Pierces reprobate Supplication to the Divell. It must be roundly done, or I will, with a charme for a full stomache, make the gorge of thy belching rhetorique, and the paunch of thy surfetting poetry fling figures upward and downeward. Phy! what neede that be spoken? True, there is choice enough of sweeter flowers, and neat oratory interteineth nicatest civilitie ; (what relish so pleasant as the breath of Suada, or what smell so aromaticall as the voyce of the muses?) but the mouth of a rude asse can tast no other lettice, and the spawne of a beastly dogfish will understand no other language but his owne. Fury must be tamed with fury, according to Homer that teacheth the God of the field to strike home ; obstinacy awed with obstinacy ; force mastred with force ; threatnings cooled with threatnings ; contempt aunswered in his owne toungue, and seeing the wild colt is so unreasonably lusty, I meane, percase, either to make his courage crouch forward, or his art winch backward. I have twentie and twentie charmes for the breaking of stubborne jades, for the biting of mad dogges, for the stinging of scorpions, for the darting of urchins, for the haunting of sprites, for the storming of tempestes, for the blasting of lightning, for the ratling of thunder, and so forth ; even for the craking of an hundred Paphatchets, or a thousand Greenes, or ten thousand Nashes peagoofes. And in case all happen to faile (for it must be a mightie exorcisme that can conjure downe spite) I have a *probatum est*, of a rare

and powerable vertue, that will hold the nose of his or his conceit to the grindstone ; and make gentle villanie confesse all the shredde and ragges of his flashingest termes are worne to the stumps. The desperate foole may clawbacke himselfe awhile ; but it is possible he may soone finde, by founde experience, he brayeth open warre against him that can bray the asse-drumme in a morter, and stampe his Jewes-trumpe to pindust. Tom Drumme, reconcile thiselfe with a counter-supplication, or fuerly it is fatally done, and thy S. Fame utterly undone, world without end. As favory a fainct, by the verdict of that excellent gentlewoman, as the cleanly disburfing of the dirtpurse of Sir Gargantua, that made king Charlemaine and his worthy chivalry laugh so mightily, that their heads aked eight dayes after. A meet idoll for such a beadman.

I have digressed from my purpose, and wandred out of my accustomed way ; but when the butter-milke goeth on pilgrimage, you must give the butterwhore leave to play the arrant knight a crash, and to make it a ganging weeke for once. Ganging weeke ? na, a ganging day, I trow, is a large allowance, and enough to betire a poore stragling wench for all her bragges. Never fory lasse so pittifully aweary of her ragged petticoate and dagled taile, the tattered livery of the confuting gentleman. Let it go, and the wispe go with it ! I honour the meekest humility, but scorne the insolentest arrogancy under my foote ; and say to the highest imagination of vanity, Thou art a proude sopp. When thou carriest thy witt loftiest, and prankest-upp thy selfe-loove in his gawdiest colours, thou art but an asses head, and a peacockes taile. Loove other, and thou mayst be looved of other for pure charity ; hate other, and thou art one of the most

odious paddes in the world: a Turke for M. Aschams archers to shoote-at, and a Jewes eye for Christian needles. Now, a little breathing pawse will do no harme.

Were not malice as wilfull in maintaining abuse, as rash in offering the fame, and arrogancy as obstinate in the conclusion, as violent in the premisses, I readily could, and willingly would undertake a more temperate and pleasing course; but the fairest offer is fowly contemned, the gentlest suite unkindly repulsed: say I what I can, malice wilbe itselfe; or do I what I can, arrogancy wilbe itselfe, and no other impression can sinke into the hart of spite, or the eare of pride, but instigations of spite, or suggestions of pride. Other motives are meere simplicities; and every treaty of pacification, or parly of reconciliation, the shaking of an aspen leafe. The devils oratour is an heralde of warre, not a legate of peace; and his dammes poet, the rankest challenger at short, or long, that ever sent defiance in white, or blacke. To refuse the tryall would, in the common opinion, seeme a shame; to accept the offer, in the best judgements, is a shame; to take the foile were a discredit; to give the foile is no credit. A hard case, where patience may be supposed simple, and avengement will be reputed unwise; where I cannot hold my peace without warre upon warre, nor speake without blame upon blame; where I must either be a passive or an active asse in print. I stand not upon the point of honour, or upon termes of reputation; but as it is a glory for the inferiour to offer the combat, like the champion of prowes or the duellist of courage, so I would the superiour might refuse that without prejudice, which he cannot undertake without disparagement, or performe without obloquie. To spoile Pierce Penniles were a poore

booty, and to make Thomas Nash kisse the rod (by her favour that hath pleafurably made him a *Sultan Temunboius*, and another *Almanus Hercules*, the great captaine of the boyes) were as fory a victory, but only in her *Bello Euboico*, or in her main-battaile of scouldes. Yet seeing he provoketh me so malapertly hand to hand, and seeing the infancy of his fancy will not otherwise be weaned from his cranke conceit, better such a victory with some inconvenience, (for I hope I may without arrogancy presume of the victory) then continuall disturbance with more and more mischief. Hector never raged amongst the Grecians, nor Achilles amongst the Trojans, as Meridarpax, the most furious and thrise-redoubted captaine of the mife, rushed upon the wofull frogges in that heroicall battaile. But Meridarpax himselfe, in his impetuous and massacrous fallies, never made such a havocke of the miserable frogges as this swash-pen would make of all English writers, howsoever garnished with eloquence, or stored with matter, might he be suffred to hewe them downe, like stockes or shrubbes, without controulement. He wil soone be ripe, that already giveth so lusty onsets, and threateneth such desperate maine careers as surpasse the fiercest cavalcads of *Bellcrophon*, or *Don Alonso d'Avalos*. Nothing curtaileth the courage of his bravery, or dawnteth the swelling chivalry in his nostrils, but that excellent learning is not esteemed as it deserveth, nor singular men advaunced according to the merites of their worthinesse. Might Penniles, singular Penniles, be the preferer of his owne vertue, or judge of his owne cause (as he courageously contendeth) I beleieve a velvet coate were scanty good enough for his wearing, that now remaineth most humbly, and thrice-affectionatly bounden to the right

honorable printing-house, for his poore shifts of apparell, and his rich capp of maintenaunce. An anatome of the minde and fortune were respectively as behoovefull and necessary as an anatome of the body; but this captain-confuter (like gallant Lobbellinus in a new livery) neither knoweth himselfe nor other, yet prefumeth he knoweth all things, with an overplus of somewhat more, in knowing his railing grammar, his raving poetry, his roisting rhetorique, and his chopping logique: with whose helpe he hath thwilted the milpost of his huge and omnipotent conceit to a pudding-pricke of Straunge Newes. Straunge newes, indeede, that Pierce Penniles should create more asses in an hower, then the brave king of Fraunce (now the mightiest warriour in Christendome, and a great advauncer of valour) hath dubbed knightes in his raigne. The ironyes of Socrates, Aristophanes, Epicharmus, Lucian, are *but carterly derisions*; the ironyes of Tully, Quintilian, Petrarch, Pontane, Sanazarius, king Alphonfus, but the sory *Festes of the Counselltable Ass*, *Richard Clarke*; the ironyes of Erasmus in his Prayse of Folly; of Agrippa, in his Disprayse of Sciences; of Cardan in his Apology of Nero, like Isocrates commendation of Bufiris, or Lucians defence of Phalaris the tyrant, but *good beare bite not*; the ironyes of Sir Thomas More in his Utopia, poemes, letters, and other writings, or of any their imitatours at occasion, but the *girdes of every milke-maide*. They were filly country fellowes that commended the bald pate, the feaver quartane, the fly, the flea, the gnat, the sparrow, the wren, the goose, the asse; flattery, hypocrisie, coosnage, bawdery, leachery, buggery, madnesse itselfe! What dunse, or Sorbonist, cannot maintaine a peradoxe? What peasant cannot say to a glorious soldiour, *Pulchrè*

mercurulè dictum, et sapienter : or, *lautè, lepidè, nihil supra* : or, *Regem elegantem narras* : or, A man is a man, though he have but a hose upon his head, or so forth. *No such light payment, Gabriell*, at Pierce Penniles, or Thomas Nashes hand. They are rare and dainty wittes that can roundly call a man asse at every third word, and make not nice to befoole him in good fullen earnest ; that can strangle the prowdest breath of their pennes, and meaneth to borrow a sight of their giddiest braines, for a perfect anatome of vanitie and follie. Though strong drinke fumeth, and *aqua fortis* fretteth, yet I will not exchange my milke-maides irony, for his draff-maides assery. It is not the first time, that I have disputed *de umbra asini*, and proved the fox, the finder, as wily a pigeon as the cunning goldsmith that accused his neighbour and condemned himselfe. A melancholy boddy is not the kindest nurse for a chearely minde, (the joviall complexion is foverainly beholding to nature,) but I know not a finer transformation in Ovid then the Metamorphosis of dudgen earnest into sport ; of harsh sower into sweet ; of losse into gaine ; of reproch into credit ; of whatsoever badd occurrence into some good. I was never so splenetique, when I was most dumpish, but I could smile at a frise jest, when the good man would be pleasurable, and laugh at fustion earnest, when the merry man would be furly. Straunge Newes wilbe as pleasant as a cricket, by cattles panges ; and where such a turlery-ginkes of conceit, or such a gibbihorse of pastime as Straunge Newes ? But fillip him, or twitch him never so little, and not such a powt-ing waspe in Ramme Ally, or such a winching jade in Smithfield. Then *asse, and worse then a Cumane asse, and foole, and dolt, and idiot, and dunse, and dorbell, and dodipoul, and*

Gibalter, and Gamaliell Hobgoblin, and Gilgilis Hoberdchoy; and all the rusty-dufty jestes in a country are too little for his great confutation, that is lineally descended *ab equis ad asinos*; and taketh on, like Hob-all-as, a stout king of the Saracens. When I am better grammered in the accidents of his proper idiotisme, and growen into some more acquaintance with his confuting dictionary, I may, peradventure, confter and pierce the whole alphabet of his sweet eloquence a little better, and make some farther triall of M. Afchams double translation, a pretty exercise in a fit subject. Meane-while I am glad to see him swimme upp to the bearded chinne in a sea of hoony and ypocrase, that so lately was plunged in a gulse of other liquor, and parlously dashed upon the horrible rocke of desperation. It is good, they say, to be merry and wife.

Poggins was merry, and Panormitan wife; Marot was merry, and Bellay wife; Scoggin was merry, and the lord Cromwell wife; Greene was merry, and Sir Christopher Hatton wife; Nash is merry, and there be enough wife, though his mothers sonne be Pierce Penniles. Or if thou beist wife, or wouldest see me no foole, beware of casualties, and a new attractive. Thy toungue is a mighty loadestone of asses, and must do asmuch for thine owne naturall eares as the magnet doth for iron. As good do it at-first as at-last; and better voluntary confession with favour, then enforced profession with more shamefull penance. *Balaams asse* was wise that would not run upon the angels sword; *Æsops asse* no foole, that was gladd to fawne upon his master like a dogge; *Lucians asse*, albeit he could not fly, like the witch his hostisse, (whose miracles he thought to imitate, had not her gentle maide coosened him with a wrong

boxe) yet could he politiquely save himselfe, please, or ease his masters, delight his mistrisses, shewe many artificiall feates, amaze the beholders, drinke the purest wine in Thesalonica, and finally eate roses, aswell as thistles. *Apul[e]ius asse* was a pregnant Lucianist, a cunning ape, a looving worme, and (what worthy prayse?) a golden asse; *Machiavels asse* of the same mettall, and a deepe politician like his founder, could provide for one better than the sparrow or the lilly; *Agrippas asse*, a woonderfull compound, and (may I say?) a divine beast, knew all things like Salomon, and bore all burdens like Atlas. The great library of king Ptolemy in Egypt, reported to have bene replenished with seventy thousand volumes, not such a library of bookes, or such an universtie of arts and sciences as Agrippas asse. They that reverence the wondrous prophecies of the Cuname sibyll, Amalthea, the chiefeft of the ten inspired sibylles, defende, or favour the excellent qualities of *the Cumane asse*, esteemed by Varro, the most profitable servant of that country, and by Columella, the most necessary instrument of all countreyes. *Every asse* is naturally a well disposed creature, and (as the learned rabbines have written) a mirrour of clemency, patience, abstinence, labour, constancy, and divine wisdom. No such schoolemaster for a wild boy, or a rash foole, as the sober and stayed asse, the country man of the wise Apollo, and the seven wise masters.

Venerat et senior pando Silenus asello. Silenus, the tender foster-father and sage tutour of the wanton and frolicke Bacchus, afterward how brave and frutefull! What an Orientall worthy! what an Indian conquerour! what a festivall god! When Priapus, the shamelesse god of the garden (so gentility called that leacherous divill) attempted

to surprife Vesta fleeping, what an honorable peece of fervice performed *the honeft affe*, that with his lowde braying detected that villanous affault? what heathen memoriall more shamefull to that infamous god then *the folemne facri-fice of that famous beaft*, celebrated by the Lampfacens, in revengement and reproche of that treafonable enterprife? But what treason like the treason of politique Achitophell, and plaufible Abfolon, that moft difloyally and desperatly rebelled againft the fabled majefte of the moft valorous and incomparable worthy king David? and what reward or advauncement meeter for fuch treason then hanging? And who carried the wife Achitophel to hanging, but *his owne foolifh affe*? And who carried the desperate Abfolon to hanging, but *his owne sober mule*? What fhould I furcharge your memory with more hiftories att-once? He that remembreth the government of Balaams affe, Æfops affe, Lucians affe, Apuleius affe, Machiavels affe, Agrippas affe, the Cumane affe, the Rabbines affe, Apollos affe, the feven Sages affe, Silenus affe, Priapus affe, Achitophels affe, and Abfolons mule little needeth any other tutour, or counfellour. Some would prefume to alledge the fingular and peerlefse example of the Chriftian poet,

*Ille viam oftendit, vili qua veltus afello
Rerum opifex.*

Agrippa, Cardan, Trithemius, Erafmus, and divers other notable fhollars, affecting to fhew the variety of their reading, and the omnifufficiencie of their learning, have bene boulder in quoting fuch reverend examples upon as light or lighter occafion; but humanitie muft not be too fawcie with divinitie, and enough is better then a feaft. Sweet

Apuleius, when thou haft wiped thy mouth with thine owne affe-dung, and thine owne toungue hath fayd unto thy pen, Pen, thou art an affe, then fellow-asses may shake handes, and they clapp their hands that have heard the Comedie of *Adelphi*, or the two asses; a more notable pageant then the interlude of the two Sofias, or the two Amphitryos, or the two Menœchmi, or the two Martin Guerras, or any such famous paire of the true person and the counterfait. But asses carrie mysteries, and what a riddle is this, that the true man should be the counterfait, and the false fellow the true ass? Or what a secret in philosophie shall I reveale, as unto the sonnes of the art, when I tell you asses milke is restorative, good for the gowte, for the blouddie flixe, for the clearnesse of the skinne; asses blood good for the feaver lurdane; asses flesh sodden good for the leprosie; asses liver roasted good for the falling sicknesse; asses hooves, burned to ashes, good also for the same sicknesse, for the kinges evill, for woomen labouring with a dead burden; asses bones well-boiled good against the empoisonment of the sea-hare; asses stale good for the raines of the backe, and a fine decorative to bewtifie the face by taking-of spottes and blemishes; asses dung a sweet nosegay to staunch blood, a soverain fumigation to expell a dead birth out of the moothers wombe, and a faire emplaister for a fowle mouth, as it might be for the mouth of bawdery in ryme, or of blasphemie in prose. No Homericall Machaon, or Podalirius, comparable to the right asse, that teacheth the greatest empiriques, spagiriques, cabalists, alchimistes, magicians, and occult philosophers, to wrap-up their profoundest and unrevealable mysteries in the thickest skinne, or rather in the closest intrals of an asse. I would some open-mouthed

libertines, and professed atheists had as deeply learned that cunning lesson. Even the dead carcase of the asse ingendred the flying scarabe, or sousing beetle, the noble and unreconcilable feudist; of the ægle of whom my brave adversary, the famousst dor-beetle of this age, hath learned to contemne and deprave the two mounting ægles of the heavenly art of poetry, Buchanan in Latin verse, and Bartas in French meeter; whose grosse imperfections he hath also vowed to publish, with an irrefragable confutation of Beza, and our flourishingest new-writers, aswell in divinitie as in humanitie, onely divine Aretine excepted. But no thunder-blasting affrighteth or toucheth the right ægle, and the least feather of the right ægle can soone devoure the bastard winges of other envious and quarrelous birdes. What carrion asse was the fire of this unappeafable scarabe; or what scarabe shalbe the sonne and heire of this carrion asse, I leave it wholly to the discourse of the learned ægles that were ever molested with the buzzing flye, and shall ever be haunted with the braying beast. I must spin-up my taske. And because the wild-asse wanteth a picker-devant, let him drinke his owne urine, tempered with spicknard, as he carouseth Helicon; and, according to the tradition of Vitalis *de Furno*, it will procure and encrease haire, as kindly as the artificiall liniment of doctour Levinus Lemnius for a comely beard. And in case he feareth his fellow Greenes sluttish disease, let him read the naturall histories of the asse, and the sheepe, in Aristotle, Pliny, or Gesner, and he shall finde it one of their speciall priviledges to be exempted from the arrest of the sixfooted sergeant, a continuall haunter of other hairy beastes, and onely favorable to the good asse and the gentle sheepe. Or, if haply he would be shod with a

pair of everlasting shoes, like the talaria of Mercury, (for alas, that any gentleman of worth, or correctour of the lord du Bartas, should lye in the counter in his bootes for want of shooes!) Albertus and Cardan will teach him to make incorruptible shooes of the durablest part of an asses hide, immortal leather. And ô! sweet Muses of Parnassus, are not the sweetest pipes, and pleafantest instruments made of asses bones? Or do not the skillfull geographers, Strabo and Pliny, call dainty Arcadia in Peloponesus, (the native country of the great Apollo) *the land of asses*? Was not the renowned Pan, the politique captaine of the conquerous Bacchus, and a supposed god in the Painim world, an Arcadian asse? Was not prince Arcas, the brave sonne of king Jupiter, after his death honored with the glorious memoriall of the *Great Beare* in heaven, an Arcadian asse? Was not the *Little Beare*, his moother Calistro, an Arcadian asse? Was not her father, the drad tyrant Lycaon, an Arcadian fox, an Arcadian wolfe, an Arcadian asse? Was not the mighty Atlas, the father of Maia and grandfather of Mercury, an Arcadian asse? Was not Mercury himselfe, the most-nimble and supereloquent god, an Arcadian asse? Was not Astrophill, excellent Astrophill (an other Mercury at all dexterities, and how delitious a planet of heavenly harmony!) by his owne adoption, an Arcadian asse? Histories are no snudges in matters of note, and asses had never lesse cause to be ashamed of asses. When wife Apollo, when valorous Pan, when employable Mercury, when surmounting Atlas, when the *Great* and *Little Beare* of heaven, when excellent Astrophil glory in the honorable title of Arcadian asses, who would not coovet to be recoonted in that memorable catalogue? What generous or noble antiquitie may wage comparifon with Statius Arcadians?

Astris Lunaque priores? Sweetnesse itselfe was the daughter and darling of Arcadia; and Arcadia the mother, the nurse, the dug, the sweet-hart of sweetnesse itselfe. O the sugar candy of the delicate bagpipe there! and ô the licorise of the divine dulcimers there! No marvell though his musique be sweeter, and sweeter, that is as fine an *afinus ad lyram* as the famous disciple of the worthy Ammonius, and hath Greenes mellifluous Arcadia as his fingers endes, the very funerall of the countesse of Pembrookes Arcadia. His other habiliments and complements be innumerable, and I know not an asse but hath some good quality, that is, some speciall propertie of an asse, either profitable for commodity or pleasurable for delight, as an asse may be profitable or pleasurable either simply, or in some respect. It was not for nothing that the bravest king that ever raigned upon earth, Alexander the Great, even greater then any Mars, or Jupiter, that ever brandished scepter in the world, in his royal and valorous judgment preferred the asse before the man, when being solemnly commaunded, by oracle, to sleie the first living creature he should fortune to meete withall, if after his puisant and conquerous manner he would that day obtaine the victory, he happened to meete a good honest country-man riding upon an asse, whose present sacrifice, as a most acceptable oblation, made him victorious. Lefse marvell of the archbishops aunswere, in *Mensa Philosophica* and Pontans Dialogues, that having reverently and devoutly preached on Palme Sunday of the shee-asse, where-upon Christ in humility voutsafed to ride, and after his lowly sermon mounting upon his lofty palfrey, was riding his way, somewhat fatherly and gratioously stayed awhile to heare the old womans suite, that came hastely running to-

wardes him, and boldly taking his horfe by the bridle, Now I befeech your grace, quoth ſhe, is this the ſhe-aſſe where-upon Chriſt in humility rode? No, moother, quoth he, but a poore ſole of that rich aſſe, and I a humble ſervant of that high Lord. Good enough! quoth the wooman; I knew not before that the gentle ſhe-aſſe your grace preached of had ſuch goodly ſoles: Yes, mother, quoth the biſhop, and a great deal goodlier then mine; and ſo departed, leaving behind him an everlaſting memory of that devout ſermon, and that weighty communication with the wooman in honour of the aſſe, a frutefull parent of many goodly and pompous ſoles. I will not trouble Boccace, or Poggius for tales. He was a naturall ſoole, that would have given his livery againe unto his Lord, bicauſe it was embrodered with aſſes heades, which made a comely ſhowe upon his garment, and mought full-well have befeemed ſome richer coates. Could the mill, the plough, the packe, the hamper, the panier, the cloakebagge, the burden, the fardell, the bagge and baggage, the cudgell, the goade, penury, famine, patience, labour itſelfe, ſpeake, all other apologies were ſuperfluous; they would frame a ſubſtantiall and neceſſary defence of the aſſe, and experience would declame in commendation of his perpetuall exerciſe, travaile, induſtry, valour, temperance, ſufferance, magnanimity, and conſtancy, the honorableſt and invincibleſt vertues in the world. The wiſeſt æconomy maketh eſpeciall account of three ſingular members; a marchants eare, a pigges mouth, and an aſſes backe. A ſhort note, but worth all Tuſers or Catos husbandry. Had I more experience in ſome caſes I could ſay more; and as my experience in thoſe caſes may happen to encreaſe, or amount, I will not faile to tender my devoire. I have penned large diſcourſes

in prayse of studdy, meditation, conference, exercise, industry, vigilancy, and perseverance, the worthiest things in the circuite of the earth, (nothing under heaven equivalent to labour) and whatsoever I have addressed in their behalfe, I may in fort alledge in honour of the asse; and compile whole volumes in his commendation, more available for commodity, and more necessary for use, then the workes of some great commenters in humanity, philosophy, history, and other higher professions. He that can kindly play the right asse, in ignorance wil finde knowledge, in poverty wealth, in displeasure favour, in jeopardy security, in bondage freedome, in warre peace, in misery felicity. Who so thoroughly provided for both fortunes as he? or who so strongly armed against all casualties as he? or what Seneca, Epictetus, Boetius, Petrarch, or Cardan, so effectually a scholmaster of *justitie et abstinentie* as he? or who such an œconomer to live as he? or who such a philosopher to dye as he? or what physitian for the boddy like him? or what lawier for the substance like him? or what devine for the minde like him? or where such a practitioner of vertue as he? or where such a fortune-wright as he? or, finally, where such an apt subject for the civill and morall reformation of the prudent Augustus, the good Trajan, the gentle Marcus Antoninus, the vertuous Alexander Severus, the drad Septimius Severus, or any honorable prince, or politique tyrant, that, with a reverend authoritie, would establish vertuous and awfull orders of government in his dominions?

But what an asse am I, that proceede so coldly and dully in the apology of so worthy a creature! What will you say, Gentlemen, if I can proove with pregnant arguments, artificially drawn from all the places of invention, according

to Ramus, Rodolphes, or Aristotles logique, that the fire-breathing oxen and mighty dragon, which kept the most famous golden fleece, the glorious prize of brave Jason, were asbes of Colchos? that the watchfull and dreadfull dragon, which kept the goodly golden apples in the occidentall ilands of the ocean, called Hesperides, one of the renowned prizes of dowty Hercules, was a West-Indian asbe? that the golden-horned and brafen-footed Menalian hart, the fierce Erymanthean bore, the hideous birdes Stymphalides, the puifsant Nemæan lion, and the seven hedded Lernæan hydra, which Hercules slew, were asbes of Arcadia, and other adjacent cuntryes of Morea? (for Mænalus and Erymanthus were hilles in Arcadia, Stymphalus a lake in Arcadia, Nemæa a wood in Argolis, and Lerna a fen in Argolis, an other shire of Morea;) that the serpent with the golden creast, which kept the rich fountaine of Mars in Greece, and was slaine of valiant Cadmus, was an asbe of Boëtia, so called *à bove*, where the prophet Amphiaraus breathed in oracles? that the huge serpent, Python *de monte*, ingendred shortly after Deucalions deluge, which the Arcadian god of wisedome killed with his arrowes, the first founders of the Pythian games, was a mighty asbe of the mountaines? that the mounting ægle, into which king Jupiter turned, not himselfe but, Ganymedes, (whom he tooke with him, as his flying page, and used as his standing cupbearer) was a faithfull servaunt and a perpetuall asbe? that the hondred-eyed Argus, whome queene Juno appointed the keeper of Io, the fairest creature of the Arcadian herde, and whom Mercury lulla-byed asleep with a sweet syrinx, or Arcadian pipe (many stratagemes and mysteries in that Arcadian pipe) was a blind asbe of Arcadia? I skip a thousand memorable histories

that all they, by whatfoever noble or glorious names intituled, that having charge of greateſt importance and ineſtimable value committed to their vigilant and jelous cuſtody, did attonce forego their treaſure, their honour, and their life (as many great perſonages for want of circumſpection have done) were notorious arch-aſes. If I cannot ſubſtantially proove all this, and for a neede eviēt by neceſſary and immediate demonſtration, that the great world is a great aſe, aſwell *aētū* as *potentio*, and the microcoſme a little aſe, aſwel *habitu* as *affectione*, ſay I am a notable aſe, aſwell *re* as *nomine*. The philoſopher that, ſeeking about with a candle at high noone, could not finde a man in a populous market without a candle would ſoone have pointed at a faire of aſes; and could quickly have diſcovered a frutefull generation in every element, in the water, on the earth, about the fier, in the aier. And the wiſe man, that ſaid, without exception, *Stultorum plena ſunt omnia*, might eaſely have bene entreated to have ſet it downe for a ſoverain maxim, or generall rule, *Aſinorum plena ſunt omnia*. The thundring oratour Demotheſenes was not affraide to taunt Minerva, the armed goddeſſe of fine Athens, for exhibiting favour to three unreaſonable beaſtes, the owle, the dragon, and the people; counting the people the moſt importunate and intolerable beaſt of the three, by whoſe appointment he was baniſhed the dainty citty, the onely ſeate of his raiging eloquence. If the people of fine Athens were ſuch a barbarous and ſenſeleſſe brute, as their excellenteſt oratours, philoſophers, captaines, counſellours, and magiſtrates founde to their coſt; and if the people of brave Roome, the lady and empreſſe of the world, were ſuch a bellowing beaſt of many heads, as Horace called it, Tully prooved it, Scipio

fealt it, and Cæsar himselfe rued it, what may be said of other people? Floorishing Greece in many hundred yeares acknowledgd but seven wise-men of speciall note; as the auncient world acknowledged but seven miracles, or magnificall spectacles worth the seeing; and Callimachus, a sweet poet, recording the memorable and woonderfull thinges of Peloponesus, termed them paradoxes. Vertuous Italy, in a longer terme of dominion, with much adooe bred two Catos and one Regulus; but how many Sylvios, Porcios, Brutos, Bestias, Tauros, Vitellios, Capras, Capellas, Asinios, and so forth? Other singularities meete matter for Tullyes paradoxes: the world was never given to singularities, and no such monster as excellency. He that speaketh as other use to speake avoideth trouble; and he that doth as most men doe shalbe least woondred at. The oxe and the asse are good fellowes; the libbard and the foxe queint wifardes; whatsoever abooove the common capacity, or usual hability, a paradoxe. I will not bethinke myselfe of the rigorous sentences of stoicall philosophers, or the biting apothegs of seditious malcontents, or the angry sayings of froward saturnistes, or the tumultuous proverbes of mutinous people (I have small affection to the reasons that are drawn from affection); but were not the world an universall oxe, and man a generall asse, how were it possible that so many counterfait flightes, crafty conveiances, suttile sophistifications, wily coosenages, cunning impostures, and deepe hypocrisies, should overflow all? so many opinions, paradoxes, sectes, scismes, heresies, apostacies, idolatries, atheismes, should pester the church? so many fraudes, shifts, collusions, coovens, falsifications, subornations, treacheries, treasons, factions, commotions, rebellions should disturbe

the commonwealth? It is a world to consider what a world of follyes and villanies possesseth the world, onely bicause the world is a world, *id est*, an asse? And would the presse suffer this scribling asse to dominere in print, if it were not a presse, *id est*, an asse? And would the presse suffer this scribling asse to domineer in print, if it were not a presse, *id est*, an asse? Might it please his confuting aship, by his favorable permission, to suffer one to rest quiet, he might, with my good leave, be the graund generall of asses, or raigne alone in his proper dominion, like the mighty Assyrian king, even Phul Assar himselfe, the famous son of the renowned Phul Bullochus. For so the gentlewoman hath intituled him in a place, or two, that hath vowed the canonization of Nashes S. Fame, in certaine discourses of regard, already dispatched to my satisfaction, and almost accomplished to her owne intention. It may, peradventure, be his fortune to leave as glorious a nephew behinde him as ever was the redoubted Lob-assar-duck, an other noble king of Assyria, not forgotten by the said excellent gentlewoman, but remembred with such a grace as bewtifieth divine wittes. Kind-hart hath already offered faier for it, and were it not that the great Phul Assar himselfe had fore-stalled, and engrofed all the commodities of Assyria, with all the encomium of asses, into one hand, it should have gone very-hard, but this redoubted Lob-assar-duck would have retailed, and regrated some precious part of the said commodities and advauncements. He may haply in time, by especiall favour and approved desert, (what meanes of preferment to especiall favour and approved desert?) be interteined as a chapman of choice, or employed as a factour of trust, and have some stables of asses at his appointment,

as may seeme meetest for his carriages and conveiances. For mine owne part, I must be contented to remaine at his devotion, that hath the whole generation of Assyrians at commaundement, with a certaine personall priuiledge, or rather an imperiall prerogative, to create and enstall asses at pleasure. Had I not lately revisited the Assyrian history with the said vertuous gentlewooman, one of the gallantest ornaments of her sexe, I mought perchaunce have omitted this small parcell of his great honour, and left the commendation of the asse more unperfect, which notwithstanding I must still leave most-unperfect, in respect of his unspeakable beau-desert. Unto whom, for a farewell, I can wish no more than accomplished honour, nor no lesse then athleticall health. A short exhortation will serve Socrates to continue like himselfe. A roach not sounder then a haddocke, or the stockfish, that Pliny termeth *afellus*; and nothing so unkindly hurteth an asse as the two melancholy beastes, cold and the drowsie sicknesse; the cause why asses cannot abide to inhabite the most cold and frosen territories of Scythia, but are glad to seeke their fortunes in other countryes, and to colonise in warmer seats. Blame him not that sayth, *The weather is cold, and I am wearie with confuting*: and in another place, *Had I my health, now I had leysure to be merry; for I have almost washt my hands of the Doctour*. Now I see thou art a good fellow by thine own confession, and wilt not give the asses head for the washing; cold, and the drowsie sicknesse, are thy two mortall enemies: when they are fled the country, like fugitive and dismall birdes, let us have a flitch of mirth, with a fiddle of the purest asse-bones; onely I barre the cheeke bone for feare of Sampsons tune, more then

heroicall. But the spring-tooth in the jawe will do us no harme, although it were a fountaine of muscadell, or a conduct of ypocrase. Many are the miracles of right vertue; and he entreth an infinite labyrinth, that goeth about to praise Hercules, or the asse, whose labours exceede the labours of Hercules, and whose glory surmounteth the topp of Olympus. I were best to end before I beginne, and to leave the autor of asses where I found the asse of autors. When I am better furnished with competent provision, (what provision sufficient for so mighty a province?) I may haply asay to fulfill the proverbe by washing the asses headd, and setting the crowne of highest praise upon the crowne of young Apuleius, the heire apparent of the old asse, the most glorious olde asse.

I have written in all sorts of humours privatly, I am persuaded, more then any young man of my age in England. They be the wordes of his owne honorable mouth; and the golden asse, in the superabundance of his rich humours, promiseth many other golden mountaines, but hath never a scrat of silver. Had Aristophanes Plutus bene outwardly as liberall as Greenes Mercury was inwardly prodigall, he must needs have bene the onely orientall starre of this language; and all other writers, old or new, in prose or verse, in one humour or other, but sory occidentall starres. Onely externall defects, quoth himselfe, are cast in his dish; for internall graces and excellentest perfections of an accomplished minde, who but he? Come, divine poets and sweet oratours, the silver streaming fountaines of flowingest witt and shiningest art! come, Chaucer and Spencer, More and Cheeke, Ascham and Aftely, Sidney and Dier, come the dearest sifter of the dearest brother, the sweetest daughter

of the sweetest muses, onely one excepted, the brightest diamant of the richest eloquence, onely one excepted, the resplendentest mirrour of feminine valour, onely one excepted ; the gentlewooman of curtesie, the lady of vertue, the countesse of excellency, and the madame of immortall honour ! come all the daintiest dainties of this tounge, and doe homage to your verticall starre, that hath all the fove-raine influences of the eloquent and learned constellations at a becke, and paradiseth the earth with the ambrosiall dewes of his incomprehensible witt ! But what should I dally with hoony-bees, or presume upon the patience of the gentlest spirites that English humanity affourdeth ? Pardon me, excellent mindes, and I will here dismisse my poore milke-maide, nothing appliant to the delicate humour of this minion humorist and curtesan secretary. Shall I say, Phy ! upon arrant knavery, that hath never sucked his fill of most odious malice ; or, Out upon scurrilous and obscene villany ! nurfled in the boosome of filthiest filth, and hugged in the armes of the abominablest haggas of hell ? Be it nothing to have railed upon doctours of the universitie, or upon lords of the court, (whom he abuseth most infamously, and abjecteth as contemptuously as me) ; but what other desperate varlet of the world durst so villanously have dif-famed London and the court, as he notoriously hath done in these rascall termes ? *Tell me, is there any place so lewde as this ladie London ? not a wenche sooner creepes out of the shell but she is of the religion. The court I dare not touch, but suerlie there be many falling starres, and but one true Diana. Not a wenche, a very univerfall proposition in so large and honourable a citty ; and but one, a very short exception to a generall rule of the court. Floorishing London,*

the staple of wealth, and madame-towne of the realme, *is there no place so lewde as thyselfe?* and noble court, the pallace of honour, and seate of majesty, hast thou *but one true Diana?* Is it not nigh-hand time the young haddock were caught that can already nibble so prettily? Was he, thinke you, lodged in Cappadocia for sleeping by the sunne and studying by the moone? Whom, or what, will not he shortly confute with an overrunning furie, that so bravely adventureth upon London and the court all-attonce? Honour, regard thy good reputation, and staunch the ranke blood of this arrant autor, as honest a man as some honest wooman I could name, that keepeth her honesty as she doth her Friday fast. Suffer him to proceede as he presumeth, and to end as he beginneth, and looke for a rarer beaſt in England then a wolfe, and a ſtraunger monſter in print then the divine ruffian that intituled himſelfe *Flagellum Principum*, and proved *Pestis Rerumpublicarum*. My tounge is an infant in his idiotiſme, and I had rather bleſſe my peſtilenteſt enemy then curſe any; but ſome little plaine dealing dooith not otherwhiles amiſſe, where nothing but flat and ranke groſeneſſe blotteth the paper, infecteth the aier, depraveth the good, encourageth the badd, corrupteth youth, accloieth age, and annoyeth the world. Good faith is my witneſſe, I neither affect to obſcure any light in an adverſary, nor deſier to quench any honeſt courage in an enemy; but wiſh every gift of heaven or earth, of minde or body, of nature or fortune, redoubled in both, even in the greeneſt adverſary and wildeſt enemy; in whom I honour the higheſt, and loove the loweſt degree of excellency, but am not eaſely cooſened by imperfection, branded with the counterfait marke of perfection. I am over-ready to pardon young overſights, and

forgive inconsiderate offences; but cannot flatter folly, or fawne upon vanity, or cocker ignoraunce, or sooth-up untruth, or applaude to arrogancy, either in foe or frend. It concerneth every man to looke into his owne estate with his owne eyes; but the young man, that will neither know himselfe, nor acknowledge other, must be told in brief what the common opinion reporteth at large. He hath little witt, lesse learning, left judgement, no discretion, vanity enough, stomacke at will, superabundance of felfe-conceit, outward liking to fewe, inward affection to none (his defence of Greene a more biting condemnation then my reproofe), no reverence to his patrons, no respect to his superiours, no regard to any but in contemptuous or cenforious fort, hatred or disdaine to the rest, continuall quarrels with one or other, (not such another mutterer or murmurer, even against his familiarest acquaintance) an ever-grudging and repining-mind, a ravenous throte, a gluttonous mawe, a drunken head, a blasphemous tongue, a fisking witt, a shittle nature, a revolting and runnegate disposition, a broking and huckstering penne, store of rascall phraes, some little of a brabbling schollar, more of a raving scould, most of a roisterly serving-man, nothing of a gentleman, lesse then nothing of a fine or cleanly artist. And as for termes of honesty or civility, (without which the sharpest invention is unfavery, and the daintest elocution lothsome) they are gibridge unto him, and he a Jewish rabbin, or a Latin dunse, with him that ufeth any such forme of monstrous termes. Aretine and the divels oratour would be ashamed to be convicted, or endighted, of the least respective or ceremonious phraze, but in mockage or coosenage. They neither feare goodman Sathan, nor master Beelzebub, nor sir Reverence, nor milord

Gouvernement himselfe. O wretched atheisme! hell but a scarecrow, and heaven but a woonderclout in their doctrine; all vulgar, stale, and simple, that is not a note aboove Goddes-forbid. Whom durst not he appeach, revile, or blaspheme, that forged the abominablest booke in the world, *De tribus Impostoribus Mundi*: and whom will he forbear, in any reason, or conscience, that hath often protested in his familiar hauntes to confute the worthy lord du Bartas, and all the famousst moderne-writers, saving him onely who onely meriteth to be confuted with unquenchable volumes of heaven-and-hell-fier. Perionius deciphreth the fowle preceptes and reprobate examples of his morall philosophy in an invective declamation, generally addressed unto all the princes of Christendome, but especially directed unto the most-Christian French-king, Henry the Second. Agrippa detesteth his monstrous veneries and execrable sodomies; Cardan blasoneth him the most impudent ribald that ever tooke penne in hand; Manutius investeth him the ring leader of the corruptest bawdes and miscreantest rake-hells in Italy. His familiar acquaintance, Sanfovino, doth him never awhitt more credit then needeth. Tasso disdaineth his insolent and insupportable affectation of singularity. Jovius, in his Elogies, voutfaveth him not the naming: doubtlesse he was indued with an exceeding odd-witt, and I never read a more surpassing-hyperbolicall stile. Castilios Courtier, after a pleasurable fort, graceth him with a deepe insight in the highest types and idees of humane perfections, whereunto he most curiously and insatiably aspired. His wanton disciples, or vain-conceited favorites, (such crowses such egges,) in their fantastical letters and bacchanall sonnets, extoll him monstrously, that is, absurdly,

as the onely monarch of witt, that is, the prodigall sonne of conceit, and the mortall god of all vertue, that is, the immortall divell of all vice. Oh, what grandiloquous epithets, and supereminent titles of incredible and prodigious excellency, have they bestowed upon the arch-miracle of the world, Signior Unico ! not so little as the huge Gargantua of prose, and more then the heaven-furmounting Babel of ryme. But what approved man of learning, wisedome, or judgement, ever deigned him any honour of importance, or commendation of note ? But the young darling of S. Fame, Thomas Nash, aliàs Pierce Penniles, the second leviathan of prose, and an other Behemoth of ryme, he it is that is borne to glorifie Aretine, to disgrace Bartas, and to undoe me. Say I, write I, or dooe I, what I can, he will haunt and trounce me perpetually, with spritish workes of supere-rogation, incessant tormentours of the civilian and devine. Yet some-boddy was not woont to endight upon aspen leaves of paper ; and take heede, firrha, of the fatall quill, that scorneth the sting of the busie bee, or the scratch of the kittish shrew. A bee ? a drone, a dorre, a dor-bettle, a dormouse ; a shrewe ? a drab, a hag, a flibber-gibbet, a make-bate, the pickthanke of vanity, the pickpocket of foolery, the pickpurse of all the palteries and knaveries in print. She doth him no wrong that doth him right, like Astræa, and hath stiled him with an immortall penne, the *bawewaw* of schollars, the *tutt* of gentlemen, the *tee-heegh* of gentlewomen, the *phy* of citizens, the *blurt* of courtiers, the *poogh* of good letters, the *faph* of good manners, and the *whoop-hooe* of good boyes in London streetes. Nash, Nash, Nash (quoth a lover of truth and honesty) ; vaine Nash, railing Nash, craking Nash, bibbing Nash, baggage Nash,

swaddish Nafh, rogish Nafh, Nafh the bellweather of the scribbling flocke, the swish-fwash of the presse, the bumm of impudency, the shambles of beastlines, the poulkat of Pouls-churchyard, the shrich-owle of London, the toade-stoole of the realme, the scorning-stocke of the world, and the horrible confuter of foure letters! Such an antagonist hath fortune allotted me to purge melancholy, and to thrust me upon the stage, which I must now loade, like the old subject of my new prayse. There is no warring with destiny; and the lord of my leysure will have it so. Much good may it do the puppy of S. Fame, so to confute and so to be confuted! Where his intelligence faileth, (as God wotteth, it faileth often) he will be so bold, without more inquiry, to checke the common sense of reason with the proper sense of his imagination, infinitely more high in conceit, then deepe in understanding; and where any phraze or word presumeth to approach within his swing, that was not before enrowled in the commen-places of his paperbooke, it is presently meere inkhornisme; albeit he might have heard the same from a thousand mouthes of judgement, or read it in more then an hundred writings of estimation. Pythagoras silence was woont to be a rule for ignorance or immaturity, (no better bitt for unlearned or unexpert youth then Pythagoras silence;) but understand, or not understand, both are one: if he understand it is dunfery, if he understand not, it is either cabalisme in matter, or inkhornisme in forme: whether he be ripe, or unripe, all is raw, or rotten, that pleaseth not his imperiall tast. Had he ever studied any pragmaticall discourse, or perused any treaties of confederacy, of peace, of truce, of intercourse, of other forrein negotiations, (that is specially noted for one of my inkhorne wordes,) or researched

any actes and monuments, civill or ecclesiasticall ; or looked into any lawes, statutes, injunctiōs, proclamations, (na, it is one of his witty flowtes, *he begins like a proclamation*, but few treatises better penned then some proclamations :) or had he seene any autenticall instruments, pragmatique articles, or other politique traicts, he would rather have woondred I should use so fewe formall termes, (which I purposely avoided, as not so vulgarly familiar) then have marvelled at any which I used. He is of no reading, in comparison, that doth not acknowledge every terme in those letters to be autenticall English ; and allow a thousand other ordinary pragmaticall termes, more straunge then the straunget in those letters, yet currant at occasion. The ignorant idiot (for so I will proove him in very truth) confuteth the artificiall wordes which he never read ; but the wayne fellow (for so he prooveth himselfe in word and deede) in a phantasticall emulation presumeth to forge a mishapen rablement of absurde and ridiculous wordes, the proper bodes of his newfangled figure, called foolerisme : such as *inkhornisme, absonisme, the most copious Carminist, thy carminicall art, a providitore of young schollars, a corrigidore of incongruities, a quest of cavalieros, inamoratos on their workes, a theologicall Gimpanado, a Dromidote Ergonist, sacrilegiously contaminated, decrepite capacitie, fictionate person, humour unconvertible, merriments unexilable, the horrifonant pipe of inveterate antiquitie*, and a number of such inkhornish phrases, as it were a pan of outlandish collops, the very bowels of his profoundest schollerisme. For his eloquence passeth my intelligence, that cleapeth himselfe a *Calimunco* for pleading his companions cause in his owne Apology ; and me a *Pistlepragmos* for defending

my frendes in my Letters ; and very artificially *interfuseth finicallitie, fillogistrie, disputative right, hermaphrodite phrases, declamatorie stiles, censoriall moralizers, unlineall usurpers of judgement, infamizers of vice, new infrigement to destitute the inditement, deriding dunstically, banging abominationally, unhandsoning of divinityship, absurdifying of phrases, ratifying of truthable and eligible English, a calme dilatement of forward harmefulnesse and backward irefulnessse*, and how many sundry dishes of such dainty fritters, rare junkets, and a delicate service of him, that compiled the most delitious Commentaries *De Optimitate Triporum*. And what say you, boyes, the flatteringest hope of your moothers, to a *Porch of Panim Pilfryes, Pestred with Prayses*? Dare the pertest or destest of you hunt the letter, or hauke a metaphor, with such a *Tite-tute-tate*? He weeneth himselfe a speciall penman ; as he were the head-man of the pamphletting crew, next and immediately after Greene ; and although he be a harsh oratour with his tounge (even the filed Suada of Ilocrates wanted the voyce of a firen, or the sound of an eccho) yet would he seeme as fine a secretary with his penne as ever was Bembus in Latin, or Macchiavell in Italian, or Guevara in Spanish, or Amiot in French ; and with a confidence preasseth into the rowte of that humorous ranke that affecteth the reputation of supreme singularity. But he must crave a little more acquaintance at the hand of art, and serve an apprenticeship of some nine or ten yeares in the shop of curious imitation (for his wild phantasie will not be allowed to maintaine comparifon with curious imitation) before he will be hable to performe the twentieth or sortith part of that sufficiency, whereunto the cranknesse of his imagination already aspir-

eth ; as more exquisite then the Atticisme of Isocrates, or more puissant then the fury of Tasso. But how insolently soever grosse ignorance presumeth of itselfe (none so hawty as the basest buffard), or how desperatly soever foole-hardy ambition advaunceth his owne colours, (none so foole-hardy as the blindest Hobb), I have seldome read a more garish and pibald stile in any scribling inkhornist ; or tasted a more unfavory flaumpaump of wordes and sentences, in any fluttish pamphletter, that denounceth not defiance against the rules of oratory, and the directions of the English secretery, which may, here and there, stumble upon some tolerable sentence, neighbourly borrowed, or featly picked out of some fresh pamphlet, but shall never finde three sentences together worth any allowance ; and as for a fine, or neat period, in the dainty and pithy veyne of Isocrates, or Xenophon, marry that were a periwig of a firen, or a wing of the very bird of Arabia, an inestimable relique. Tush a point ! neither curious Hermogenes, nor trim Isocrates, nor stately Demosthenes, are for his tooth ; nor painting Tully, nor Carving Cæsar, nor purple-dying Livy for his humour. It is for Cheeke, or Ascham, to stand levelling of colons, or squaring of periods, by measure and number ; his penne is like a spigot, and the wine-presse a dullard to his ink-presse. There is a certaine live and frisking thing, of a quaint and capricious nature, as peerlesse as namelesse, and as admirable as singular, that scorneth to be a booke-worme, or to imitate the excellentest artificiality of the most renowned workemasters that antiquity affourdeth. The witt of this and that odd modernist is their owne ; and no such minerall of richest art, as prægnant nature ; the plentifullest wombe of rare invention and exquisite elocution Whuist ! art and

nature, aduance thy precious selfe in thy most gorgeous and magnificent robes ; and if thy new descant be so many notes above old æla, good now be no niggard of thy sweet accents and heavenly harmony, but teach the antike Muses their right leripup. Desolate eloquence and forlorne poetry, thy most humble suppliants *in forma pauperum*, cladd in mournefull and dreery weedes as becommeth their lamentable case, lye prostrate at thy dainty foote, and adore the idoll-excellency of thy monstrous singularity. O stately Homer and lofty Pindarus ! whose witt mounteth like Pegafus, whose verse streameth like Nilus, whose invention flameth like Ætna, whose elocution rageth like Sirius, whose passion blustereth like Boreas, whose reason breatheth like Zephirus, whose nature favoreth like Tempe, and whose art perfumeth like Paradise ! ô the mightiest spirites of couragious vigour, of whom the delicate Grecian, worthy Roman, and gallant vulgar muses learned their shrillest tunes and hyperbolicall notes ! ô the fiercest trompets of heroicall valour, that with the straunge sympathhy of your divine fury, and with thoffame piercing motions of heavenly inspiration, were wont to ravish the affections, and even to mealt the bowels of bravest mindes ! See, see, what a woondrous quaine—— But peace, milkemaide ! you will still be shaming yourselfe and your bringing-upp. Hadst thou learned to discern the fairest face of eloquence from the fowlest visage of barbarisme, or the goodlyest frame of method from the ill-favoredest shape of confusion, as thou canst descry the finest flower from the courtest branne, or the sweetest creame from the fowrest whey, peradventure thou wouldest dote indeede upon the bewtifull and dainty feature of that naturall stile, that appropriate stile, upon which himselfe is

so depely inamored. I would it were out-of peradventure ; no man more greedy to behold that miraculous art of emprooved nature. He may malapertly bragge in the vaine ostentation of his owne naturall conceit, and if it please him make a golden calfe of his woodden stufte ; but shew any halfe page without piperly phraſes and tinkerly composition, and ſay I am the ſimpleſt artiſt that ever looked fayre rhetoric or ſweet poetry in the face. It is the deſtiny of our language to be peſtered with a rablement of botchers in print ; but what a ſhamefull ſhame is it for him that maketh an idoll of his owne penne, and raiſeth-upp an huge expectation of paper-miracles, (as if Hermes Trifmegiſt were newly riſen from the dead, and perſonally mounted upon Danters preſſe,) to emproove himſelfe as ranke a bungler in his mightieſt worke of Supercroagation, as the ſtarkeſt patch-pannell of them all, or the groſeſt hammer-drudge in a country. He diſdaineth Thomas Delone, Philip Stubbs, Robert Armin, and the common pamphletters of London ; even the painfullerſt chroniclers tooe, bicauſe they ſtand in his way, hinder his ſcribling traffique, obſcure his reſplendiſhing fame, or have not chronicled him in their catalogues of the renowned moderne autors, as he meritoriouſly meriteth, and may peradventure be remembred hereafter. But may not Thomas Delone, Philip Stubbs, Robert Armin, and the reſt of thoſe miſuſed perſons, more diſdainfully diſdaine him, bicauſe he is ſo much vayner, ſo little learned, ſo nothing eleganter, then they ? and they ſo much honeſter, ſo little obſcurer, ſo nothing contemptibler, then he ? Surely, Thomas, it were pollicy to boaiſt leſſe with Thomas Delone, or to atchieve more with Thomas More. If vaunting or craking may make thee ſingular, thy art is

nature, aduance thy precious selfe in thy most gorgeous and magnificent robes ; and if thy new descant be so many notes above old æla, good now be no niggard of thy sweet accents and heavenly harmony, but teach the antike Muses their right leripup. Desolate eloquence and forlorne poetry, thy most humble suppliant *in forma pauperum*, cladd in mournfull and dreery weedes as becommeth their lamentable case, lye prostrate at thy dainty foote, and adore the idoll-excellency of thy monstous singularity. O stately Homer and lofty Pindarus ! whose witt mounteth like Pegafus, whose verfe streameth like Nilus, whose invention flameth like Ætna, whose elocution rageth like Sirius, whose passion blustereth like Borcas, whose reason breatheth like Zephirus, whose nature favoreth like Tempe, and whose art perfumeth like Paradise ! ô the mightiest spirites of couragious vigour, of whom the delicate Grecian, worthy Roman, and gallant vulgar muses learned their shrillest tunes and hyperbolicall notes ! ô the fiercest trompets of heroicall valour, that with the straunge sympathhy of your divine fury, and with thesame piercing motions of heavenly inspiration, were wont to ravish the affections, and even to mealt the bowels of bravest mindes ! See, see, what a woondrous quaimè—— But peace, milkemaide ! you will still be shaming yourselfe and your bringing-upp. Hadst thou learned to discern the fairest face of eloquence from the fowlest visage of barbarisme, or the goodlyest frame of method from the ill-favoredest shape of confusion, as thou canst descry the finest flower from the courtest branne, or the sweetest cream from the fowrest whey, peradventure thou wouldest dote indeede upon the bewtifull and dainty feature of that naturall stile, that appropriate stile, upon which himselfe is

so depely inamored. I would it were out-of peradventure ; no man more greedy to behold that miraculous art of emprooved nature. He may malapertly bragge in the vaine ostentation of his owne naturall conceit, and if it please him make a golden calfe of his woodden stuffe ; but shew any halfe page without piperly phrascs and tinkerly composition, and say I am the simplest artist that ever looked sayre rhetorique or sweet poetry in the face. It is the destiny of our language to be pestered with a rablement of botchers in print ; but what a shamefull shame is it for him that maketh an idoll of his owne penne, and raiseth-upp an huge expectation of paper-miracles, (as if Hermes Trismegist were newly risen from the dead, and personally mounted upon Danters presse,) to emproove himselfe as ranke a bungler in his mightiest worke of Supererogation, as the starkest patch-pannell of them all, or the grossest hammer-drudge in a country. He disdaineth Thomas Delone, Philip Stubs, Robert Armin, and the common pamphletters of London ; even the painfulest chroniclers tooe, bicause they stand in his way, hinder his scribbling traffique, obscure his resplendishing fame, or have not chronicled him in their catalogues of the renowned moderne autors, as he meritoriously meriteth, and may peradventure be remembred hereafter. But may not Thomas Delone, Philip Stubs, Robert Armin, and the rest of those misused persons, more disdainfully disdaine him, bicause he is so much vayner, so little learner, so nothing eleganter, then they ? and they so much honefter, so little obscurer, so nothing contemptibler, then he ? Surely, Thomas, it were pollicy to boast lesse with Thomas Delone, or to atchieve more with Thomas More. If vaunting or craking may make thee singular, thy art is

incomparable, thy wit superexcellent, thy learning omnifufficient, thy memory infinite, thy dexterity incomprehensible, thy force horrible, thy other giftes more then admirable; but when thou hast gloried thy uttermost, and struggled with might and maine to seeme the great Turke of secretaries, if my eyesight be any thing in the art of endighting (wherein it hath pleased favour to repute me something) upon my credit for ever, thou hast nothing in thee of valour but a railing gall, and a swelling bladder. For thy penne is as very a gentleman foist as any pickpurse living; and that which is most miserable, not a more famous, neckverse then thy choice, to thifelse pernicious, to youth daungerous, to thy frendes grievous, to thy adversaries pittifull, to vertue odious, to learning ignominious, to humanity noyous, to divinitie intolerable, to authority punishable, to the world contemptible. I longed to see thy best amendement, or worst avengement, but thy gay best, *ut supra*, prooveth nothing; and thy main worst, *ut infra*, lesse then nothing. Never silly mans expectation so deluded with contrary events upon the stage (yet fortune sometime is a quaint comedian, far beyond the Supposes of Ariosto) as these Strange Newes have coony-caught my conjecture; more deceived then my prognostication of the last yeare, which hapned to be a true prophet of some dismall contingents. Though I never phansied tautologies, yet I cannot repeat it enough: I looked for a treaty of pacification, or imagined thou wouldest arme thy quill, like a stowt champion with the compleat harnesse of witt and art; na, I feared the brasen shield, and the brasen bootes of Goliath, and that same hideous speare, like a weavers beame; but it is onely thyfell stomacke that blustereth like a northerenwinde: alas!

thy witt is as tame as a duck, thy art as fresh as fower ale in summer; thy brafen shield in thy forehead, thy brafen bootes in thy hart, thy weavers beame in thy tounge; a more terrible launce then the hideous speare, were the most of thy power equivalent to the least of thy spite. I say not, What aileth thy Gorgons head? or, What is become of thy Sampsons lockes? (yet where miracles were promised, and atcheivements of Supererogation threatened, they had reason that dreaded unknown forces) but ô blastes of divine fury! where is your supernaturall prowesse? and ô horne of abundance! what meaneth this dearth of plenty, this penury of superfluitie, this infancie of eloquence, this simplicitie of cunning, this stupiditie of nimblenesse, this obscuritie of braverie, this nullity of omnifufficiencie? Was Pegafus ever a cove in a cage, or Mercurie a mouse in a cheefe, or industrie a snail in a shell, or dexteritie a dogge in a dublet, or legierdemane a sloweworme, or vivacitie a lasie-bones, or entelechy a slugplum? Can lively and winged spirites suppress the divinitie of their ethereall and seraphicall nature? Can the thunder tounge-tye, or the lightning smother, or the tempest calme, or love quench, or zeale luke-warme, or valour manicle, or excellencie mew-upp, or perfection geld, or supererogation combe-cutt itselfe? Is it not impossible for humanity to be a spittle-man, rhetorique a dummerell, poetry a tumbler, history a bankrowt, philosophy a broker, wit a cripple, courage a jade? How could the sweet mermaids, or dainty nymphes, finde in their tender harts to be so farre divorced from their queintest and galiardest minion? Art, take heede of an aeger appetite, if a little greedie devouring of singularitie will so soone gett the hicket, and make thee (as it were) belch the floovens

oratorie, and (as a man would say) parbreake the fluttes poetry. Pure singularitie, wrong not thy arch-excellent selfe, but embrace him with both thy armes that huggeth thee with his five wittes ; and cowl him with thy two corall bracelets that buffeth thee with his two ruby lippes and his three diamant powers, naturall, animall, and vitall. Precious singularity ! how canst thou choose but dote upon his alabafter necke, whose inventive part can be no lesse then a fky-coloured sapphire, like the heavenly devises of the delicious poetesse Sappho, the godmoothe of that azure gemme, whose rhetoricall figures, sanguin and replendishing carbuncles, like the flamy pyrops of the glistering pallace of the sun ; whose alluring perswasions amethists, whose cutting girds adamants, whose conquering ergos loadestones, whose whole conceit as greene as the greenest jasper ; whose orient witt, the renowned Achates of king Pyrrhus, that is, the tabernacle or chauncell of the muses, Apollo sitting in the midst and playing upon his ivory harpe most enchauntingly. Is it possible those powerfull wordes of antiquity, whose mightie influence was woont to debase the miraculous operation of the most-vertuous stones, hearbes, and starres (philosophy knoweth the incredible force of stones, hearbes, and starres) should be to seeke in a panting inspired brest, the closet of revealed mysteries, and garden of infused graces ? What lockes, or barres of iron, can hold that quicksilver Mercury, whose nimble vigour disdaineth the prison, and will display itselfe in his likenes, maugre whatsoever empeachment of iron Vulcan, or wooden Dædalus ? I hoped to finde that I lusted to see, the very singular subject of that invincible and omnipotent eloquence, that in the worthiest age of the world, intituled heroically, put the most

barbarous tyranny of men, and the most-savage wildnesse of beastes to silence, and arreared woonderfull admiration in the hart-roote of obstinatest rebellion, otherwise how untractable! Had I not cause to platforme new theoricke and idees of monstrous excellency, when the parturient mountaine of miracles was to be delivered of his mighty burden of Supererogation? Who would not ride post to behold the chariot of his triumph, that glorieth as if he had woon both the Indyes from the Spaniard, or Constantinople from the Turke, or Babylon from the Sophi? But holla, brave gentlemen! and alacke, sweet gentlewomen! that would so fayne behold S. Fame in the pompe of her majestie; never poore suckling hope so incredibly crosbitten with more then excessive defection. I looked and looked for a shining funne of singularity, that should amaze the eyes and astonish the harts of the beholders; but never poore shimmering funne of singularity so horribly eclipsed. I perceive one good honest aker of performance may be more worth then a whole land of promise. Take heede, aspiring mindes, you that deeme yourselves the paragon wittes of the world, lesse your hilles of jollity be converted into dales of obscurity, and the pompe of your glory become like this pompe of shame. Even when envy boyled his inke, malice scorched his penne, pride parched his paper, fury inflamed his hart, S. Fame raged like S. Georges Dragon: marke the conclusion, the weather was cold, his stile frost-bitten, and his witt nipped in the head. Take away the flaunting and huffing braveries of his railing tropes and craking figures, and you see the whole galiarde of his rhetorique that flowteth the poore philippiques of Tully and Demosthenes, and mocketh him that chaunced to name them once in foure

letters, as he used their word entelechy, now a vulgar French and English word, once in foure and twenty sonnets. The wise priest could not tell whither Epiphany were a man-faint, or a wooman-faint, or what the diuell it was. Such an Epiphany to this learned man is entelechy, the onely quintessence of excellent and divine mindes, as is aboue mentioned, shewing whence they came by their heavenly and perpetuall motion. What other word could expresse that noble and vigorous motion, quicker then quicksilver? and the lively spring, or rather the vntall fier of that ever firring vertue of Cæsar, *Nesciaflare loco*, a mystery and a very chimera to this swadd of swaddes, that beginneth like a bullbeare, goeth on like a bullocke, endeth like a bullfinch, and hath never a sparkle of pure entelechy. Gentlemen, now you know the good nature and handsome art of the man, if you happen upon a feather, or some morsell for your likyng (it is a very fory booke that yeeldeth nothing for your liking), thanke the true autor, of whose provision you have tasted; and say not but Thomas Nash hath read something, that affecting to seeme an university of sciences, and a Royall Exchaunge of tounge, would be thought to have devoured libraries, and to know all thinges, like Iarchas and Syffarion; na, like Adam and Salomon, the archpatrons of our new Omniscians. If he did so in verity, it were the better for him, and not the worfe for me; but you see his doing, and my suffering. Neither I nor my betters can please all, nor he nor his punyes will displease all; but as in the best something remaineth that may be amended without derogation to their credit, so in the worst there may appeare something worth the allowance, with no great commendation to their person. Were I disposed to discourse,

as sometime I have bene forward upon lesse occasion, for the onely exercife of my stile and some practife of my reading, I could with a facility declare at large, that may briefly be touched. Amongft fo many notable workes of divine wittes, excepting the workes of Gods owne finger, there is not any fo abfolutely excellent wherein some blemifh of imperfection may not be noted; nor amongft fo many contemptible pamphlets, any fo fimplly bafe but may yeeld some little frute of advertifement, or some few bloffoms of difcourfe. In the foverain workemanfhip of nature herfelfe, what garden of flowers without weedes? what orchyard of trees without woormes? what field of corne without cockle? what ponde of fishes without frogges? what fky of light without darkneffe? what mirrour of knowledge without ignorance? what man of earth without frailty? what commodity of the world without difcommodity? Oh! what an honorable and wonderfull creature were perfection, were there any fuch vifible creature under heaven? But pure excellency dwelleth onely aboove; and what mortall wifedome can accleere itfelfe from errour, or what heroicall vertue can juftifie, I have no vice? The moft precious things under the funne have their defaultes; and the vileft thinges upon earth want not their graces. Virgill could enrich himfelfe with the rubbifh of Ennius; to how many rufty-dufty waines was brave Livy beholding? Tully, that was as fine as the Crufado, difdained not some furniture of his predeceffours that were as courfe as canvas; and he that will diligently feeke may affuredly finde treasure in merle, corne in strawe, gold in droffe, pearles in fhell-fifhes, precious ftones in the dunghill of Efope, rich jewels of learning and wifedome in some poore boxes. He that remembreth

Humfrey Cole a mathematicall mechanician, Robert Baker a shipwright, John Shute an architect, Robert Norman a navigatour, William Bourne a gunner, John Hester a chimist, or any like cunning and subtile empirique (Cole, Baker, Shute, Norman, Bourne, Hester, will be remembred when greater Clarkes shalbe forgotten) is a proud man, if he contemne expert artifans, or any sensible industrious practitioner, howsoever unlectured in schooles or unlettered in bookes. Even the lord Vulcan himselfe, the supposed god of the forge, and thunder-smith of the great king Jupiter, tooke the repulse at the handes of the lady Minerva, whom he would in ardent loove have taken to wife. Yet what witt or pollicy honoreth not Vulcan? and what profound mathematician like Digges, Hariot, or Dee, esteemeth not the pregnant mechanician? Let every man in his degree enjoy his due; and let the brave engineer, fine Dædalist, skilfull Neptunist, marvelous Vulcanist, and every Mercuriall occupationer, that is, every master of his craft and every doctour of his mystery, be respected according to the uttermost extent of his publique service, or private industry. I cannot stand to specific particularities. Our late writers are as they are; and albeit they will not suffer me to ballance them with the honorable autors of the Romanes, Grecians, and Hebrues, yet I will crave no pardon of the highest to do the simplest no wrong. In Grafton, Holinshed, and Stowe; in Heywood, Tusser, and Gowge; in Gascoigne, Churchyard, and Floide; in Ritch, Whetstone, and Munday; in Stanyhurst, Fraunce, and Watson; in Kiffin, Warner, and Daniell; in an hundred such vulgar writers many things are commendable, divers things notable, some things excellent. Fraunce, Kiffin, Warner, and Daniell of

whom I have elfewhere more eſpeciall occaſion to entreate, may haply finde a thankefull remembraunce of their laudable travailes. For a poliſhed and garniſhed ſtile, fewe go beyonde Cartwright and the chiefeſt of his confuters, furniſhed writers ; and how few may wage compariſon with Reinolds, Stubbes, Mulcaſter, Norton, Lambert, and the lord Henry Howarde ? whoſe ſeverall writings the ſilver file of the workeman recommendeth to the plauſible interteinement of the daintieſt censure. Who can deny but the Reſolution and Mary Magdalens Funerall Teares, are penned elegantly and pathetically ? Scottes Diſcovery of Witchcraft diſmasketh ſundry egregious impoſtures, and in certaine principall chapters, and ſpeciall paſſages, hitteth the nayle on the head with a witneſſe : howſoever, I could have wiſhed he had either dealt ſomewhat more curteouſly with Monſieur Bodine, or confuted him ſomewhat more effectually. Let me not forget the apology of ſundry proceedings by jurisdiction eccleſiaſticall, or the aunſwere to an abſtract of certaine Actes of Parliament, injunctiions, canons, conſtitutions, and ſynodols provinciall, unleſſe I will ſkip two of the moſt materiall and moſt formall treatiſes that any Engliſh print hath lately yeilded. Might I reſpectively preſume to intimate my ſlender opinion, without flattery or other undecency, methought ever doctour Whitgift (whom I name with honour,) in his ſermons was pithy ; doctour Hutton profound, doctour Young piercing to the quicke, doctour Chaderton copious, M. Curtes elegant, M. Wickam ſententious, M. Drant curious, M. Deering ſweet, doctour Still found, doctour Underhill ſharpe, doctour Matthew fine, M. Lawherne gallant, M. Doone eloquent, M. Andrewes learned, M. Chaderton methodicall, M. Smith patheticall ;

fundry other in their proper veyne notable, some exquisite, a few singular. Yet which of the best hath all perfections? (*nilhil omni ex parte beatum*) or which of the meanest hath not some excellency? I cannot read over all, I have seldome heard some (it was never my happ to heare doctour Cooper, doctour Humfry, or doctor Fletcher, but in Latin); and I would be loth to injury, or prejudice any that deserveth well, *viva voce*, or by pen. I deeme him wise that maketh choice of the best, avoideth the worst, reapeth fruite by both, despiseth nothing that is not to be abhorred, accepteth of any thing that may be tollerated, interteineth every thing with commendation, favour, contentment, or amendment. Lucians asse, Apuleius asse, Agrippas asse, Macchiavels asse, miself, since I was dubbed an asse by the only monarch of asses, have found savory herbes amongst nettles, roses amongst prickles, berryes amongst bushes, marrow amongst bones, graine amongst stubble, a little corne amongst a great deale of chaff. The *abjectest naturalls* have their specificall properties, and some wondrous vertues; and philosophy will not flatter the *noblest or worthiest naturals* in their venoms or impurities. True alchimy can alledge much for her extractions and quintessences, and true physique more for her corrections and purgations. In the best I cannot commende the badd; and in the baddest I reject not the good, but precisely play the alchimist in seeking pure and sweet balmes in the rankest poisons. A pithy or filed sentence is to be embraced, whosoever is the autor; and for the least benefit received a good minde will render dutifull thanks, even to his greatest enemy. O! humanity, my Lullius, or ô! divinitie my Paracelsus, how should a man become that pecce of alchimy that can turne the rattesbane

of villany into the balme of honesty ; or correct the mandrake of scurrility with the myrrhe of curtesie, or the saffron of temperance ? Conceive a fountaine of contentation, as it were of oyle, or a bath of delight, as it were of nectar ; and preferre that saffron, or myrrhe, that odoriferous saffron, or aromaticall myrrhe, before this soverain oyle, and that balme, that divine balme ? before this heavenly nectar. No naturall reftorative like that saffron, or myrrhe, the very death of contention ; nor any artificiall cordiall like that balme, the very like [life] of humanity, or should I rather say, the very life of life ? We have many new methods and platformes ; and some, no doubt, as exquisite as scrupulous ; but assuredly it were an excellent method and singular platforme to honour the wise and moderate the foole, to make much of the learned and instruct the ignorant, to embrace the good and reforme the badd, to wish harme to none and do well to all ; and, finally (for that is the scope of this and some other discourses), to commend the fox and prayse the asse. Martin himselfe is not altogether a waspe, nor Browne altogether a cankerwoorme, nor Barrow altogether a scorpion, nor haply Kett altogether a cockatrice. Take heede of the snake in the grasse, or the padd in the straw, and feare no bugges. Be Martin a Martin Guerra, Browne a browne-bill, Barrow a wheelbarrow, Kett a kight : H. N. an O. K., if any sound judgements finde themselves beholding unto them in any point of advisement, or consideration (singular men, and namely scismatiques and heretiques, were ever woont to have some thing or other extraordinary and remarkable), they may without my contradiction confesse their beholdingnesse, and for so much professe a recognisance of their dett. I thanke Nash for

something ; Greene for more ; Pap-hatchet for much more ; Perne for most of all. Of him I learned to know him, to know my enemies, to know my frends, to know miselfe, to know the world, to know fortune, to know the mutability of times, and slipperinesse of occasions ; an inestimable knowledge, and incomparably more worth then doctor Gregories *ars mirabilis*, or Politians *pancypisemon*. He was an old foaker indeede, and had more witt in his hoary head then six hundred of these flourishing greene heads and lusty curled pates. He would either wisely hold his peace, or smoothly flatter me to my face, or fuerly pay-home with a witnesse ; but commonly in a corner, or in a maze, where the autour might be uncertaine, or his packing intricate, or his purpose some way excusable. No man could beare a heavy injury more lightly, or forbear a learned adversary more cunningly, or bourde a wilfull frend more dryly, or circumvent a daungerous foe more covertly, or countermin the deepest underminer more futtelly, or lullaby the circumspcctest Argus more sweetly, or transforme himselfe into all shapes more deftly, or play any part more kindly. He had such a patience as might soften the hardest hart, such a sober-moode as might ripen the greenest witt, such a flye dexterity as might quicken the dullest spirite, such a scrupulous manner of proceeding in doubtfull cafes as might putt a deepe consideration into the shallowest phantasy ; such a suspicious jeloufy as might smell-out the secretest complot, and defeat any practise ; such an inextricable sophistry as might teach an Agathocles to hypocrise profoundly, or a Hieron to tyrannise learnedly. Whereas other carried their harts in their toungues, and their heads in their pennnes, he liked no such simplicity ; but after a smugge and fleeing

guife, carried his tounge in his hart, his penne in his head, his dagger in his sleeve, his love in his boosome, his spite in his pocket; and when their speech, writing, or countenance bewrayed their affection (as the manner is), nothing but his fact discovered his drift, and not the beginning but the end was the interpreter of his meaning. Some of us, by way of experiment, assayed to feele his pulse, and to tickle his wily veynes in his owne veyne, with smoothing and glosing as handfomly as we could; but the bottome of his minde was a gulfe of the maine, and nothing could sound him deeply but the issue. Iwis, elder men had bene too-young to manage such an enterprife with succeffe, and the finest intelligencer, or sagest politician in a state would undoubtedly have bene gravelled in the execution of that rash attempt. He could speake by contraries as queintly as Socrates, and do by contraries as shrewdly as Tiberius: the master of Philip de Comines, Lewes the French king, one of the busiest, jelousest, and craftiest princes that ever raigned in that kingdome, might have borrowed the foxes satchell of him; and peradventure not onely Æsops, or Archilochus fox, but even Lyfanders fox, Aristomenes fox, Pisistratus fox, Ulysses fox, Chirons fox, and Proteus owne fox might learne of him to play the fox in the hole. For Stephen Gardiners fox, or Macchiavels fox are too young cubbes to compare with him that would seeme anything rather then a fox, and be a fox rather then any thing else. Legendaries may recorde woonderments; but examine the futtellest counsels, or the wilyest practises of Gargantua himselfe, and even Gargantua himselfe, albeit his gowne were furred with two thousand and five hundred fox skines, mought have bene his pupill. And I doubt not but he that worshipped *Solcm*

in Leone, after some few lectures in his astronomy, would have honored *Solem in Vulpe*. He once kept a cubbe for his pleasure in Peter-houfe in Cambridge (as some keepe birds, some squirrels, some puppyes, some apes, and so forth) and ministred notable matter to S. Maryes pulpet, with stories of the cubb, and the Fox, whose Actes and Monuments are notorious; but had the young one bene as cunning an artift for his part as the old-one was for his, I beleeeve all the colledges in both univerfities, or in the great univerfitie of Chriften dome, could not have patterned the young man with fuch an other batchelour of fophiftry, or the old mafter with fuch an other doctour of hypocrisie. Men may difcours at pleasure, and feede themselves with carpes and pikes, but I have knowen fewe of fo good a nature, fo devoide of obftinacy, fo far alienated from contumacy, fo contrary to frowardneffe or testivenesse, fo tractable, fo buxom, fo flexible, fo appliable to every time, place, and person; fo curious in observing the least circumstance of importance or advantage, fo conformable to publique proceedings and private occasions, fo respectfull to every one of quality, fo curteous to men of woorship, fo dutifull to men of honour, fo ceremonious in tendering his devotion to his good lordes or good ladies, fo obedient to authority, fo loyall to majesty, fo indifferent to all, and in all. He was gentle without familiarity (for he doubted contempt), severe without rigour (for he feared odioufneffe), pleasant without levity (for he regarded his estimation), grave without solemnity (for he curred popular favour), not rash, but quicke; not hasty, but speedy; not hoat, but warme; not eger in shew, but earnest indeede; no barker at any, but a biter of some, round, and sound. The clergy never wanted excel-

lent fortune-wrightes ; but what byshop or politician in England so great a temporiser as he, whom every alteration founde a new man, even as new as the new moone ? And as he long yawned to be an archbishop, or byshop, in the one or other church (they wronged him that termed the image of both churches a neuter) so did he not arch-deserve to be installed the puling preacher of humility, humility, humility ; and the gaping oratour of obedience, obedience, obedience ? Was not ever *Pax vobis* one end of his gasping fermon, and the very foote of his warbling song ? Be it percase a small matter to temporise in foure alterations of kinges and queenes, but what an ambidexterity, or rather omnidexterity, had the man that, at one and the same meeting, had a pleasing tounge for a Protestant, a flattering eye for a Papist, and a familiar nodd for a good fellow ? It was nothing with him to temporise *in genere*, or *in specie*, according to Macchiavels grounde of fortunate successe in the world, that could so formally and featly personize *in individuo*. He must know all the sinewes of commodity, and acquaint himselfe with all the joints of advantage, that will live and teach other to live. *ô Fælix Cato, tu solus nosti vivere* ; or if Cato were over-peremptory and stoicall to enjoy that felicity, *ô Fælix Perne, tua solius ars vivendi*. Doubtlesse it were better for the world, by infinite masses of millions, could the barbarous and tragicall tyrants, Saturne and Mars, two divellish gods, moderate their fury, as he could do ; or the hypocritall and comicall tyrants, Jupiter and Mercury, two godly divels, temper their cunning as he could do. It was in him to give instructions unto Ovid for the repenning of his Metamorphoses anew, and he better merited the name of Vertumnus then Vertumnus himselfe.

His designements were mysteries, his counsels oracles, his intentions like Minotaure in the labyrinth, his actions like the stratagemes of Fabius, his defiance like the wellcome of Circe, his menaces like the songs of the sirens, his curses like the blessings of those witches in Aphrica that forspoke what they prayed, and destroyed what they wished to be saved. I have seen spannels, mungrels, libbards, antelops, scorpions, snakes, cockatrices, vipers, and many other serpents in sugar-worke; but to this day never sawe such a standing dish of sugar-worke as that sweet-toungued doctor, that spake pleasingly whatsoever he thought, and was otherwhiles a fayre prognostication of fowle weather. Such an autenticall irony engrosed, as all oratory cannot eftsoones counterpane. Smooth voyces do well in most societies, and go currently away in many reckonings, when rough-hewne words do but lay blockes in their own way. He found it in a thousand experiences, and was the precisest practitioner of that soft and tame rhetorique that ever I knew in my dealings; and in case I should prefer any man of whatsoever quality before him, for a stayed government of his affections (which he alwayes ruled, as Homers Minerva bridleed Pegasus), or for an infinite and bottomlesse patience, fitt to the patience of Anaxarchus, or Job, I should injury him and mine owne conscience exceedingly. Were he handled as London kennels are used of fluttes, or the Thames of floovens, he could pocket-it-up as handfomely as they, and complaine in as fewe wordes as any chanell or river in England when they are most contumeliously depraved. His other vertues were colours in graine, his learning lawne in starch, his wisdome napry in suddes, his conscience the weather in Aprill: when he was young the weather in Sep-

tember as he grew elder the weather in February, toward his end, and not such a current prognostication for the fifty yeares wherein he flourished as the ephemerides of his conscience. For his smug and canonicall countenance, certainly, he mought have bene S. Boniface himselfe; for his sayre and formall speach, S. Benediſt or S. Eulaly; for his merry conceits, S. Hillary; for his good husbandry (he was merry and wife), S. Servatius; for his invincible sufferance, S. Vincent the Martir; for his retracting or recanting, S. Augustine; for his not seeing all thinges, S. Bernard; for his preaching to geese, S. Frauncis or S. Fox; for his praying, a S. Pharise; for his fasting, a S. Publicane; for his chastitie, a *Sol in virgine*; for his pastorall devotion, a shepheards calender; for his fame, an almanacke of saincts. But if ever any were patience incorporate it was he, and if ever any were hypocrisy incarnate it was he, unto whom I promised to dedicate an eternall memoriall of his immortall vertues, and have payed some little part of my vowes. I twice or thrise tryed him to his face, somewhat sawcily, and smartly, but the picture of Socrates, or the image of S. Andrew, not so unmooveable; and I still reverence the honorable remembraunce of that grave and most eloquent silence as the sageſt leſſon of my youth. Had Nash a dramme of his witt, his aunfwere should have bene mum, or his confutation the sting of the scorpion. Other Straunge Newes, like Papp-hatchets rapp with a bable, are of the nature of that fame snowt-horned rhinoceros, that biteth himselfe by the nose; and besturre them like the dowty fencer of Barnewell, that played his taking-up with a *recumbenticus*, and his laying-downe with a broken pate in some three or foure corners of his head. He must revenge

looked-for affliction. He that warneth me armeth me, and it is much that a prepared minde and boddy may endure, but unsuspected accidents are hardly remedied ; and in the fayrest weather of security to offer the fowleſt play of hoſtility is an incredible advantage. So Cæſar Borgia, the ſoverain type of Macchiavels Prince, wan the dukedome of Urbin in one day. So the emperour Charles the Fiftes army, paſſing thorough Roome occuſively, ſacked the city and enriched themſelves exceedingly. So many invincible ſtates have bene ſuddainly ruined, and many puiſſant perſonages eaſely vanquiſhed. Brave exploites, where the cauſe as honorable as the effect admirable. But honorable or diſhonorable, pollicy was ever a privy counsell, whoſe poſie, *dolus an virtus* : glory a ravishing oration, ambition a courſer, loove a hoat-ſpurre, anger a fierbrand, hope a graine of muſtard-ſeede, courage an errant knight, covetice a marchant venturer, fury a fierce executioner, whoſe word the ſword, and whoſe law *Non quâ ſed quò*. As monarchies, principalities, and conqueſtes, ſo pety-governements, ſegniories, lieutenantſhips, magiſtracies, maſterſhips, ſelowſhips, have their coolerable practiſes, and nothing is cunning that is apparent. The fox preacheth *pax vobis* to the capons and geefe, and never worſe intended then when the beſt pretended. Horaces, or rather Borgiaes,

Aſtuta ingennum vulpes imitata leonem ; the deepeſt grounde of higheſt pollicies, and the very ſtratageme of ſtratagemes. The glorious Indian conqueſtes are famously knowne to the world ; and what was the valorous duke of Parma in his braveſt victories but *vulpes imitata leonem* and a new compounde of old ſtratagemes ? Jovius Fox, in his militar and amorous empreſſes, may call himſelfe a fox,

but some learned clarkes and judicious censours, profound politiques like Macchiavell or Perne (for Macchiavell never discourfed with his pen as Perne devised with his minde) would go very nigh to call him a goose, that gave for his mott, *Simul astu et dentibus utor*. And his griphen, in some opinions was never a whit the more terrible for that lustie posie, a jolly heroicall verse in a grammar schoole,

Unguibus et rostro atque alis armatus in hostem. I never read that Alexanders Bucephalus, or Cæsars couragious horse, had any such or such glorious posies; and I believe Bevisses Arundell was no great braggard with motts. The Trojan horse, or rather the Grecian horse, was not such an asse to advaunce himselfe with any such prowde impresse as *scandit fatalis machina muros*; but ministred ruthfull and tragicall matter of that hawty posie to the stately poet. Did the flying Pegasus of the redoubted Bellerophon, before his adventurous expedition against the hideous lion-dragon chimæra, that is, against the fierce savages which inhabited that fier-vomiting mountaine in Lycia, provide to arme himselfe with a brave posie, or boast of his horrible mother Medusa, or of his owne Gorgonean winges? Did the fiery horses of the sunne, that is, of the hoattest east-countrys, threaten prince Phaeton, or the world, with a dreadfull verse,

Tunc sciet ignipedum vires expertus equorum? May not peradventure the prowdest horse be countermotted with a poore fragment of Statius *serviet asper equus*? Or may not haply the dowiest asse be emblemed with a good old devise, *insulso tribulus sapit asper asello*? The rowgheft nett is not the best catcher of birdes; nor the finest pollicy a professed termagant. Although Lyfanders oxen said nothing,

yet the fox Lyfander could tell which of them was a slug-garde, and which laborious. It is not the verball mott but the actuall imprefe that argueth a generous or noble minde. Children and fooles use to crake ; action the onely embleme of Jugurth and the notableft fellowes ; whose manner is, *plurimum facere, minimum de fe loqui*, the honorableft devise that worthy valour can invent. The tree is known by the fruite, and needeth no other pofie ; the gallanteft mott of a good apple-tree is a good apple ; of a good warden-tree, a good warden ; of a good limon-tree, a good limon ; of a good palme, a good date ; of a good vine, a good grape, and fo forth : their leaves their prognostications, their bloffomes their boasts, their braunches and boughes their bravery, their fruite their armes, their emblemes their nobility, their glory. I dare not fay that Pittacus was as wife as he that beginneth like front-tufted Occafion (for Occafion is balde behinde), and endeth like Ovids loover, (for Ovids loover muft not attempt but where he will conquer) : few refoluter mottes then *aut nunc, aut nunquam* ; and what valianter pofie then, *aut nunquam tentes, aut perfice* ? but Pittacus was one of the feven famous masters, and in his fage wifedome thought it a fober leffon, Foretel not what thou intendeft to atcheive, leffe peradventure, being frustrate, thou be laughed to fcorne and made a notable flowting-ftocke. Perhaps he was an affe, and fpeaketh like a foole ; (for who is not an affe and a foole with this Thomas Wifedome ?) but fome plaine men are of his opinion, and will hardly beleve that the frankeft braggards are the doubtieft dooers. Were I a collectour of witty apothegs like Plutarch, or of pithy gnomes like Theognis, or of dainty emblemes like Alciat, fucrly Pittacus fhould not be the laft at the leaft in

that rhapsody. Meane-while, it is nothing out of my way to prayse the clofe, or suspitious asse, that will not trouble any other with his privy counsell, but can be content to be his owne secretary. There be more quaint experiments in an universitie then many a politique head would imagine. I could nominate the man that could teach the Delphicall oracle, and the Ægyptian crocodile to play their parts. His civill toungue was a riddle; his ecclesiasticall toungue a hieroglyphique; his face a visard; his eyes cormorants; his eares martyrs; his witt a maze; his hart a juggling sticke; his minde a mist; his reason a vayle; his affection a curbe; his conscience a maske; his religion a triangle in geometry; his charity a syllogisme in *celarent*; his hospitality aleven monethes in the yeare, as good as good Friday; for one moneth or very neere, he was resident upon his deanry, and kept open house in the ile, like Ember weeke. Of an other mans, no man more liberall; of his owne, no man more frugall. He deeply considered (as he did all thinges) that good oeconomy was good pollicy; that it was more wisedome to borrow then to lend *gratis*; that the ravens croking loofeth him many a fatt pray; that the forstalling and engrosing of privy commodities was a pretty supply of privy tithes; that many a little by little and little maketh a mickle; that often returne of gaine amounteth; that the fox never fareth better then when he is curfed most; that a silver picklocke was good at a pinch, and a golden hooke a cunning fisher of men; that every man was neereft to himselfe, and the skinne neerer then the shirt; that there were many principles and preceptes in art, but one principall maxime or soverain cautell in practise, *Si non castè, tamen cautè*; that there was no security in

himselfe with a learned discourse of deepest silence, or come better provided then the edge of the rasour, that would be valued as wise as that Apollo Doctour, whose epitaph none can display accordingly, but some sprite of the ayer or the fier. For his zeale to God and the Church was an aery triplicity, and his devotion to his prince and the state a fiery trigon. And fuerly he was well-advised that comprized a large history in one epithite, and honoured him with the title of *the thrife-learned Deane*. Onely I must needs graunt one such secret, and profound enemy, or shall I say, one such thrife-secret and thrife-profound enemy? was incomparably more pernicious then a hundred hatchets or country-cuffes, a thousand Greenes or cunnycatchers, an army of Nafhes, or Pierces Peniles, a Forrest of wilde beastes, or whatsoever Ilias of professed evils. It is not the threatener, but the underminer that worketh the mischief; not the open assault, but the privy surprize that terrifieth the old soldiour; not the furling floud, but the low water that affrayeth the expert pilot; not the high, but the hidden rocke that endangereth the skilfull mariner; not the busie pragmaticall, but the close politician that supplanteth the puissant state; not proclaimed warre, but pretended peace that striketh the deadly stroke. What historian remembreth not the futtle stratagemes of king Bacchus against the Indians, of king Midas against the Phrygians, of king Romulus against the Sabines, of king Cyrus against the Lydians, of many other politike conquerours, against fundry mighty nations, principalities, seignories, citties, castels, fortresses? Brave valour may sometime execute with fury, but prowesse is weake in comparison of other practises, and no puissance to pollicy, no rage to craft, no force to witt, no pretence to religion,

(what spoiles under colour of religion?) no text to the glosse, what will not the glosse maintaine by hooke or crooke? It was not Mercuries woodknife that could so easely have dispatched Argus, the lieutenant of queene Juno, had not his inchaunting pipe first lulled him asleepe. And was not Ulysses in greater jeopardy by the alluring fires, charming musicians, then by cruell Polyphemus, a boisterous giant? Undoubtedly Cæsar was as singularly wise as unmatchably valiant, and rather a fox then a lion; but in his wisedome he was more affrayde of Sylla then of Marius, of Cato then of Catiline, Cassius then of Antony, of Brutus then of Pompey; to be short, of Saturne then of Mars, of Mercury then of Jupiter himselfe. It were a long discourse to survey the wily traines and crafty fetches of the old and new world, but whosoever is acquainted with stratagemes, auncient or moderne, knoweth what an hourde of pollicies lurketh in the shrowde of dissimulation, and what wonders may be atchieved by unexpected surprizes. The professed enemy rather encombreth himselfe and annoyeth his frendes, then overthroweth his adversary, or oppresseth his foes. Alexanders and Cæsars suddaine irruptions made them the lordes of the world and masters of kinges, whiles greatest threateners got nothing but greatest losse and greater shame. What should I speake of the first founders of monarchyes, Ninus and Cyrus? of the venturous Argo-pilots? of the worthy Herôes? of the dowieft errant knights? of the bravest men in all ages, whose mightiest engin (notwithstanding whatsoever hyperbole of valour or fury) was *Scarborough warning*; and whose conquestes were assoone knownen-abroade as their invasions. No power like the unlikely assault, nor any mischief so peremptory as the un-

looked-for affliction. He that warneth me armeth me, and it is much that a prepared minde and boddy may endure, but unsuspected accidents are hardly remedied ; and in the fayrest weather of security to offer the fowleſt play of hoſtility is an incredible advantage. So Cæſar Borgia, the ſoverain type of Macchiavels Prince, wan the dukedome of Urbin in one day. So the emperour Charles the Fiftes army, paſſing thorough Roome occuſſively, ſacked the citty and enriched themſelves exceedingly. So many invincible ſtates have bene ſuddainly ruined, and many puiſſant perſonages eaſely vanquiſhed. Brave exploites, where the cauſe as honorable as the effect admirable. But honorable or diſhonorable, pollicy was ever a privy counsell, whoſe poſie, *dolus an virtus*: glory a raviſhing oration, ambition a courſer, loove a hoat-ſpurre, anger a fierbrand, hope a graine of muſtard-ſeede, courage an errant knight, covetice a marchant venturer, fury a fierce executioner, whoſe word the ſword, and whoſe law *Non quò ſed quò*. As monarchies, principalities, and conqueſtes, ſo pety-governements, ſegniories, lieutenantſhips, magiſtracies, maſterſhips, felowſhips, have their coolerable practiſes, and nothing is cunning that is apparent. The fox preacheth *pax vobis* to the capons and geefe, and never worſe intended then when the beſt pretended. Horaces, or rather Borgiaes,

Aſtuta ingennum vulpes imitata leonem; the deepeſt grounde of higheſt pollicies, and the very ſtratageme of ſtratagemes. The glorious Indian conqueſtes are famously known to the world ; and what was the valorous duke of Parma in his braveſt victories but *vulpes imitata leonem* and a new compounde of old ſtratagemes? Jovius Fox, in his militar and amorous empreſſes, may call himſelfe a fox,

but some learned clarkes and judicious cenfours, profound politiques like Macchiavell or Perne (for Macchiavell never discourfed with his pen as Perne devised with his minde) would go very nigh to call him a goofe, that gave for his mott, *Simul astu et dentibus utor*. And his griphen, in some opinions was never a whit the more terrible for that luftie pofie, a jolly heroicall verfe in a grammar fchoole,

Unguibus et roftro atque alis armatus in hoftem. I never read that Alexanders Bucephalus, or Cæfars couragious horfe, had any fuch or fuch glorious pofies; and I believe Beviffes Arundell was no great braggard with motts. The Trojan horfe, or rather the Grecian horfe, was not fuch an affe to advaunce himfelfe with any fuch prowde imprefse as *scandit fatalis machina muros*; but miniftred ruthfull and tragicall matter of that hawty pofie to the ftately poet. Did the flying Pegafus of the redoubted Bellerophon, before his adventurous expedition againft the hideous lion-dragon chimæra, that is, againft the fierce favages which inhabited that fier-vomiting mountaine in Lycia, provide to arme himfelfe with a brave pofie, or boaft of his horrible mother Medufa, or of his owne Gorgonean winges? Did the fiery horfes of the funne, that is, of the hoatteft eaft-countrys, threaten prince Phaeton, or the world, with a dreadfull verfe,

Tunc fciet ignipedum vires expertus equorum? May not peradventure the prowdeft horfe be countermotted with a poore fragment of Statius *serviet asper equus*? Or may not haply the dowieft affe be emblemed with a good old devife, *infulfo tribulus fapit asper afello*? The rowgheft nett is not the beft catcher of birdes; nor the fineft pollicy a professed termagant. Although Lyfanders oxen faid nothing,

yet the fox Lyfander could tell which of them was a fluggarde, and which laborious. It is not the verball mott but the aëtuall imprefe that argueth a generous or noble minde. Children and fooles ufe to crake ; aëtion the onely embleme of Jugurth and the notableft fellowes ; whose manner is, *plurimum facere, minimum de fe loqui*, the honorableft devise that worthy valour can invent. The tree is known by the fruite, and needeth no other pofie ; the gallanteft mott of a good apple-tree is a good apple ; of a good warden-tree, a good warden ; of a good limon-tree, a good limon ; of a good palme, a good date ; of a good vine, a good grape, and fo forth : their leaves their prognostications, their bloffomes their boafte, their braunches and boughes their bravery, their fruite their armes, their emblemes their nobility, their glory. I dare not fay that Pittacus was as wife as he that beginneth like front-tufted Occafion (for Occafion is balde behinde), and endeth like Ovids loover, (for Ovids loover muft not attempt but where he will conquer) : few refoluter mottes then *aut nunc, aut nunquam* ; and what valianter pofie then, *aut nunquam tentes, aut perfice* ? but Pittacus was one of the feven famous mafters, and in his fage wife-dome thought it a fober leffon, Foretel not what thou intendeft to atcheive, leffe peradventure, being frufterate, thou be laughed to fcorne and made a notable flowting-ftocke. Perhaps he was an affe, and fpeaketh like a foole ; (for who is not an affe and a foole with this Thomas Wifedome ?) but fome plaine men are of his opinion, and will hardly beleve that the frankeft braggards are the doubtieft dooers. Were I a collectour of witty apothegs like Plutarch, or of pithy gnomes like Theognis, or of dainty emblemes like Alciat, furerly Pittacus fhould not be the laft at the leaft in

that rhapsody. Meane-while, it is nothing out of my way to prayse the clofe, or fuspicious affe, that will not trouble any other with his privy counsell, but can be content to be his owne secretary. There be more queint experiments in an univerfitie then many a politique head would imagine. I could nominate the man that could teach the Delphicall oracle, and the Ægyptian crocodile to play their parts. His civill toungue was a riddle; his ecclesiasticall toungue a hieroglyphique; his face a vifard; his eyes cormorants; his eares martyrs; his witt a maze; his hart a juggling fticke; his minde a mift; his reafon a vayle; his affection a curbe; his confcience a mafke; his religion a triangle in geometry; his charity a fyllogifme in *celarent*; his hofpitality aleven monethes in the yeare, as good as good Friday; for one moneth or very neere, he was refident upon his deanry, and kept open houfe in the ile, like Ember weeke. Of an other mans, no man more liberall; of his owne, no man more frugall. He deeply confidered (as he did all thinges) that good oeconomy was good pollicy; that it was more wifedome to borrow then to lend *gratis*; that the ravens croking loofeth him many a fatt pray; that the forftalling and engroffing of privy commodities was a pretty fupply of privy tithes; that many a little by little and little maketh a mickle; that often returne of gaine amounteth; that the fox never fareth better then when he is curfed moft; that a filver picklocke was good at a pinch, and a golden hooke a cunning filher of men; that every man was neereft to himfelfe, and the skinne neerer then the fhirt; that there were many principles and preceptes in art, but one principall maxime or foverain cautell in praftife, *Si non caſtè, tamen cautè*; that there was no security in

the world without Epicharmus incredulity, Dions apistie, or Heywoods fast binde and fast finde; that Bayard in the stable, and *Legem pone*, were substantiall points of law; that many thinges are hypothetically to be practised, which may not categorically be revealed; that two frendes or bretheren may keepe counsell, when one of the two is away; that *Unum necessarium*, and so forth. For, *vincit qui patitur* would go nighhand to open the whole packe, and tell wonderfull tales out off schoole. Pap-hatchet talketh of publishing *a hundred merry tales* of certaine poore Martinists; but I could here dismaske such a rich mummer, and record such *a hundred wise tales*, of memorable note with such a smart morall, as would undoubtedly make this pamphlet the vendiblest booke in London, and the Register one of the famousest autors in England. But I am none of those that utter all their learning attonce; and the close man (that was no mans friend but from the teeth outward; no mans foe but from the hart inward) may percase have some secret frendes, or respective acquaintance, that, in regarde of his calling or some private consideration, would be loth to have his coate blased, or his fatchell ransacked. Beside, what methodicall artist would allow the encomium of the foxe in the prayse of the asse, unlesse I would proove by irrefragable demonstration, that the false fox was a true asse: as I once heard a learned physician affirme, if a goose were a fox, he was a fox. Yet suerly, by his favour, who could sharply judge and durst freely speake, he was a fox and a halfe in his whole body, and in every part of his soule: albeit I will not deny, but he mought in some respectes be a goose, and after a fort (as it were) an asse; especially for defeating one without cause, and troubling

the same without effect, that, for ought he knew, might possibly have it in him to requite him alive and dead. Let the wronged party not be injured ; and I dare avowe, he never did, nor ever will injury or prejudice any, in deede, word, or intention : but if any whosoever will needes be offering abuse in fact, or snip-snapping in termes, sith other remedy shrinketh, he may peradventure not altogether passe unanswered. He thinketh not now on the booted foole, that alwaies jetteth in his startups, with his stilliard hatt in his drouse eyes, but of another good auncient gentleman, that mought have bene his father for age, his tutour for learning, his counsellour for wisedome, his creditour for silver, his catechist for religion, and his ghostly father for devotion. He once, in a scoldes pollicy, called me foxe betweene jest and earnest (it was at the funerall of the honorable Sir Thomas Smith, where he preached, and where it pleased my Lady Smith and the coexecutours to bestow certaine rare manuscript bookes upon me, which he desired). I answered him betweene earnest and jest, I might haply be a cubb, as I might be used, but was over-young to be a fox, especially in his prefence. He smiled, and replied after his manner, with a chameleons gape, and a very emphaticall nodd of the head. Whosoever, or whatsoever he was, certes, my old backfrend of Peter-house was the locke of cunning conveyance ; but such a lock, as could not possibly be opened with any key, but the key of opportunity, and the hand of advantage. If opportunity were abroad, Iodocus was not at home ; where occasion presented advantage, pollicy wanted no dexterity ; and the light-footed fox was not so swift of foote as nimble of witt, and quicke of hand. Some, that called him the lukewarme doctour,

and likened him to milke from the cowe, founde him at such a fitt overwarmed for their ferventest zeale: and I remember a time, when one of the hottest furnace, shewing himselfe little better then a cowe, he, in a quavering voyce and a lightning spirite, taught the wild roe his lesson. Haft was not so forward to runne to a commodity, but Speede was swifter to fly to an advantage; and where Haft somewhat grossely bewrayed his forwardnesse, Speede very finely marched in a cloude, and founde the goddesse Hypocrisie as fly a conductresse as ever was fayre Venus to Æneas, or wife Minerva to Ulysses, in their quaint passages. We may discourse of naturall magique, and supernaturall *cabale*, whereof the learnedest and crediblest antiquity hath recorded wonderfull histories; but it is the rod of Mercury, and the ring of Gyges, that worke miracles; and no mathematician, magitian, or cabalist, may countervail him, that in his heroicall expeditions can walke in a cloude, like a vapour, or in his divine practises go invisable, like a spirite. Brave mindes and ventrous harts thanke him for this invaluable note, that could teach you to atcheive more with the little finger of Pollicy, then you can possibly compasse with the mighty arme of Prowesse. Or else in my curious observation of infinite histories, Hypocrisie had never bene the great tyrant of the world, and the huge Antichrist of the Church. The weapon of the fier and aier is lightening; the weapon of the earth and water, cunning. Was not he fhrewdly encountred that was prestigiously besieged, and invisibly undermined with that weapon of weapons? What other supply could have seconded or rescued him, but Death; that had often bene the death of his life in his worthiest frendes, and was eftsoones the death of his Death

in his wylieſt enemy? whoſe ſpite was intricate, but detected; and whoſe ſubtility marvelous, but diſvailed: and he that diſcloſed the ſame is, perhaps, to leave an immortall teſtimoniall of his Indian diſcovery. In the meane time, as the admirable geometrician Archimedes would have the figure of a cylinder or roller engraved upon his toombe, ſo it were reaſon the thrife-famous devine ſhould have the three-fided figure, or equilater triangle, imprinted upon his ſepulchre: with this, or ſome worthier epitaph, deviſed according to the current method of *Tria ſequuntur tria*.

The Coffin ſpeaketh.

{ *Aſke not, what newes? that come to viſite wood:*
 { *My treaſure is three faces in one hood:*
 { *A chaungling triangle, a turnecoate rood.*

{ *A lukewarne Trigon, a three-edged toole,*
 { *A three-oard galley, a three-footed ſtoole,*
 { *A three-wing'd weathercock, a three-tongu'd ſchoole.*

{ *Three hedded Cerberus, wo be unto thee!*
 { *Here lies the onely trey and rule of three;*
 { *Of all triplicities the A. B. C.*

Some-body oweth the three-ſhapen Geryon a greater duty in recogniſance of his often-promiſed curteſies, and will not be founde ungratefull at occaſion. He were very ſimple, that would feare a conjuring Hatchet, a rayling Greene, or a threatening Naſh; but the old dreamer, like the old dogge, biteth ſore, and no foe to the flattering Perne, or pleaſing Titius, that have ſugar in their lippes, gall in their

stomackes ; water in the one hand, fier in the other ; peace in their sayings, warre in their doings ; sweetnes in their exhortations, bitterneffe in their canvaſtes ; reverence in their titles, cooven in their actions ; notable men in their kinde, but pitch-branded with notorious diffimulation ; large promiſers, compendious performers ; ſhallow in charity, profounde in malice ; ſuperficiall in theory, deepe in practice ; maſters of ſophiſtry, doctors of hypocriſie ; formall friends, deadly enemies ; thrife-excellent impoſtours ! Theſe, theſe were the onely men that I ever dreaded ; eſpecially that ſame od man *Trium Litterarum*, that for a linſy-woolſie wit, and a cheverell conſcience, was *A Per ſe A* : other braggardes or threatners whatſoever I feare, as I feare Hobgoblin, and the bugges of the night. When I have fought-up my day-charmes and night-spelles, I hope their power to hurt ſhal be as ridiculouslly ſmall, as their deſire to affright is outrageouslly great. I never ſtood ſtiſly in defence of mine own hability or ſufficiency ; they that empeach me of imperfection in learning, or practice in diſcourſing, or endighting, in any art or profeſſion, confute me not, but confirme mine own confeſſion. It is onely my honeſty and credit that I endeavour to maintaine : other defectes I had rather ſupply by induſtry then cloake by excuſe, and reſerre the deciſion of ſuch points to the arbitrement of indifferency : to which alſo I preferre the prayſes of my diſpraiſers, and beſeech equity to render them their due with a largeſſe of favour. Judgement is the wiſeſt reader of bookes ; and no art of diſtinctions ſo infallible as grounded diſcretion, which will ſoone diſcerne betweene white and black ; and eaſely perceive what wanteth, what ſupera-boundeth ; what becommeth, what misbecommeth ; what

in this or that respect deserveth commendation; what may reasonably or probably be excused; what would be marked with an asteriske, what noted with a blacke coale. As in mettals, so in files he hath slender skill that cannot descry copper from gold, tinne from silver, iron from Steele, the refuse from the rich veyne, the droffe from the pure substance. It is little of value, either *for matter or manner*, that can be performed in such perfunctory pamphlets, on either side; but how little soever it be, or may appeare, for mine owne part I refuse not to underly the verdict of any curteous, or equall censure that can discerne betwixt chalke and cheese. *Touching the matter*, what wanteth or might be expected here, shall be particularly and largely recompensed, as well in my discourses, intituled Nashes S. Fame, which are already finished, and attend the publication; as also in other supplements thereof, especially those of the above-mentioned gentlewoman, whom, after some advise-ment, it pleased to make the Straunge Newes of the railing villa[i]n, the cushionet of her needles and pinnes. Though my scriblings may fortune to continue awhile and then have their desert, according to the laudable custome, (what should toyes or dalliances live in a world of businesse?) yet I dare undertake with warrant, whatsoever she writeth must needes remaine an immortall worke, and will leave in the activest world an eternall memory of the fillicst vermin that she shall voutsafe to grace with her bewtifull and allective stile, as ingenious as elegant. *Touching the manner*, I take it a nice and frivolous curiositie for my person to bestow any cost upon a trifle of no importance; and am so overshadowed with the flourishing braunches of that heavenly plant, that I may seeme to have purposely prevented all

comparifon, in yeelding that homage to her divine witt, which at my handes ſhe hath meritoriouſly deſerved. Albeit, I proteſt, ſhe was neither bewitched with entreaty, nor juggled with perſuaſion, nor charmed with any corruption, but onely moved with the reaſon which the equity of my cauſe, after ſome little communication, in her unſpotted conſcience ſuggeſted. They that long to advaunce their owne ſhame (I alwayes except a phenix or two) may bravely enter the liſtes of comparifon, and do her the higheſt honour in deſpite, that they could poſſibly deviſe in a ſerviceable devotion. She hath, in my knowledge, read the notableſt hiſtories of the moſt ſingular woomen of all ages, in the Bible, in Homer, in Virgill (her three ſoverain bookes, the divine archetypes of Hebrue, Greeke, and Roman valour), in Plutarch, in Polyen, in Petrarch, in Agrippa, in Tyraquell, in whom not, that have ſpecially tendered their diligent devoir to honour the excellenteſt woomen that have lived in the world ; and commending the meaneſt, extolling the worthieſt, imitating the rareſt, and approving all according to the proportion of their endowments, envieth none, but art in perſon and vertue incorporate, the two preciousſt creatures that ever flouriſhed upon earth. Other woomen may yeelde to Penelope, Penelope to Sappho, Sappho to Arachne, Arachne to Minerva, Minerva to Juno, Juno to none of her ſexe ; ſhe to all that uſe her and hers well ; to none of any ſexe that miſuſe her, or hers. She is neither the nobleſt, nor the faireſt, nor the fineſt, nor the richeſt lady, but the gentleſt, and wittieſt, and braveſt, and invincibleſt gentlewoman that I know : not ſuch a wench in Europe to unfwaddle a faire baby, or to ſwaddle a fowle puppy. Some of you may aime at her perſonage, and it is

not the first time that I have termed her stile the tinsell of the daintiest muses and sweetest graces ; but I dare not particularise her description according to my conceit of her beautifull without her licence, or permission, that standeth upon masculine not feminine termes, and is respectively to be dealt withall, in regarde of her courage, rather then her fortune. And what if she can also publish more workes in a moneth then Nash hath published in his whole life, or the pregnantest of our inspired Heliconists can equall? Could I dispose of her recreations and some others exercises, I nothing doubt, but it were possible (notwithstanding the most curious curiositie of this age) to breede a new admiration in the minde of contempt, and to restore the excellentest bookes into their wonted estate, even *in integrum*. Let me be notoriously condemned of partiality and simplicity, if she fayle to accomplish more in gallant performance (now she hath condescended to the spinning-upp of her filken taske) then I ever promised before, or may seeme to insinuate now. Yet she is a wooman, and for some passions may challenge the generall priviledge of her sexe, and a speciall dispensation in the cause of an affectionate friend, devoted to the service of her excellent desert, whom he hath founde no lesse then the handmayd of art, the mistres of witt, the gentlewoman of right gentleness, and the lady of right vertue. Howbeit, even those passions she hath so ordered and managed with such a witty temper of violent but advised motions, full of spirite and bloud, but as full of sense and judgement, that they may rather seeme the marrow of reason, than the froath of affection ; and her hoattest fury may fitly be resembled to the passing of a brave career by a Pegasus, ruled with the reanes of a Minervas bridle. Her

pen is a very Pegafus indeede, and runneth like a winged horfe, governed with the hand of exquisite skill. She it is that muft returne the mighty famous worke of Supererogation with benet and collect. I have touched the booted Shakerly a little, that is alwayes riding and never rideth; alwayes confuting and never confuteth; alwayes ailing fomething and railing any thing; that shamefully and odiously mifufeth every frend, or acquaintance, as he hath served fome of his favorableft patrons (whom for certain refpectes I am not to name), M. Apis Lapis, Greene, Marlowe, Chettle, and whom not? that faluteth me with a *Gabrieliffime Gabriel*, which can give him the farewell with a *Thomaffiffime Thomas*, or an *affiffime affe*; yet have not called him a filthy companion, or a scurvy fellow, as all the world that knoweth him calleth him; that in his *Pierce Penniles* and *Straunge Newes*, the bull-beggars of his courage, hath omitted no word or phrafe of his railing dictionary, but onely *Tu es Starnigogolus*; and hath valiantly vowed to have *the laft word*, to dye for't.

*Plaudite victori, Juvenes hic quotquot adelfis;
Nam me qui vicit, doctior est Nebulo.*

The beft is where my aunfwere is, or may be deemed, un-fufficient (as it is commonly over-tame for fo wilde a bullocke), there She, with as vifible an analyfis as any anatome, strippeth his art into his doublet, his witt into his fhirt, his whole matter and manner into their firft principles; his matter *in materiam primam*, his manner *in formam primam*, and both *in privationem ultimam, id eft, his laft word*, fo gloriously threatened. I defire no other favour at the handes of curtefic, but that art and witt may be her readers,

and equitie my judge, to whose unpartiall integrity I humbly appeale in the premisses, with dutiful recommendation of Nashe S. Fame, even to S. Fame herselfe, who with her owne flourishing handes is shortly to erect a Maypole in honour of his victorious *last word*. Doubt ye not, gallant gentlemen, he shall finde the guerdon of his valour and the meede of his meritorious worke. Though my pen be a slugplum, looke for a quill as quicke as quicksilver, and pittie the foary swaine, that hath incurred the indignation of such a quill, and may everlastingly be a miserable spectacle for all libelling rakehelles that otherwise might desperatly presume to venture the foyle of their cranke folly. The stay of the publication resteth onely at my instance; who can conceive small hope of any possible account, or regard of mine owne discourses, were that faire body of the sweetest Venus in print, as it is redoubtably armed with the compleat harnesse of the bravest Minerva. When his necessary defence hath sufficiently accleered him whom it principally concerneth to acquitt himselfe, she shall no sooner appeare in person, like a new starre in Cassiope[i]a, but every eye of capacity will see a conspicuous difference betweene her and other myrrours of eloquence; and the wofull slave of S. Fame must either blindfilde himselfe with insensible perverfitie, or behold his owne notorious folly with most shamefull shame. It will then appeare, as it were in a cleere urinall, whose witt hath the *greene-sicknesse*; and I would deeme it a greater marvell, then the mightiest wonder that happened in the famous yeare 88, if his cause should not have the *falling-sicknesse* that is encountred with an arme of such force. M. Stowe, let it be enchronicled for one of the singularities, or miracles of this age, that a thing lighter

then Tarletons Toy, and vayner then Shakerlyes Conceit, that is, Nash, should be the subject of so invaluable a worke; and be it known to impudency by these presentes that his brasen wall is battred to pindust, and his iron gate shaken all to nothing. It is in the least of her energetically lines to do it more easily than a fine thread cracketh a jangling bell. A pretty experiment, and not unlike some of her strange inventions and rare devises, as forcible to move as feat to delight! The issue will resolve the doubtfullest minde, and I am content to referre incredulity to the visible and palpable evidence of the terme probatory, when either the light of nature and the sunne of art must be in eclipse, or the shining rayes of her singular giftes will display themselves in their accustomed brightness, and discover the base obscurity of that mischievous planet that, in a vile ambition, seeketh the exaltation of his fame by the depression of their credit, that are hable to extinguish the proudest glimze of his lampe. Her rare perfections can livelyest blason themselves; and this penne is a very insufficient oratour to expresse the heavenly bewties of her minde; but I never knew vertue a more inviolable virgine then in her excellent selfe, and the day is yet to come wherein I ever founde her with a defective or eclipstique creature. She knoweth I flatter not her fortune; and if I honour her vertue, whose confirmed modestie I could never see disguised with any glose of commendation, who can blame me for discharging some little part of a greater dutie? She hath, in meere gratuity, bestowed a largesse upon her affectionate servaunt, that imputeth the same as an excessive favour to her hyperbolically curtesie, not to any merite in himselfe. But the lesser my desert the greater her liberality, whom I cannot any way

reacquite, farther then the zeale of a most-devoted minde may extende ; as incessantly thankefull as infinitely debtfull. For to addresse a plaufible discourse, or to garnish a pane-gyricall oration in her prayse as occassion may present, will appeare to be a taske of civill iustice, not any peece of civill curtesie, when her owne silver tractes shall publish the precious valour of her golden vertues, and decipher the inestimable worth of the autor by her divine handyworke. At the first vewe whereof, as at the piercing sight of the amiablest bewtie, who can tell how suddaine passions may worke ? or what a sting some tickling interjection may leave in the hart and liver of affection ? I am ever prone to hope as I wish, even the best of the worst ; and although wilfull malice be a stiffe and stubberne adversary to appease, yet I have seene a greater miracle then the pacification of paper-warres, or the attonement of inkhorne foes. There She standeth that, with the finger of industry and the toungue of affability, hath achieved some straunger woonders upon as rough and harsh fellowes as,

*The noddie Nash, whom every serving swash
With pot-jesses dash, and every whip-dog lash.*

(For the ryme is more famous then was intended,) and, with the same causes emproved, why may she not directly or violently accomplish the same effectes ? or what is impossible to the perswasive and patheticall influence of reason and affection ? It is a very dismall and caitive planet that can finde in his hart to encounter those two gracious starres with malicious aspectes, which he must despitefully encounter, that will obstinately oppose his peevish rancour to her sweete civility. In case nothing else will prevayle with

infatiable envy and unquenchable malice (for so I am eft-foones informed, whatsoever course be taken for the mitigation of his rage) yet I am vehemently persuaded in physique, and resolved in pollicy, that the oile of scorpions will finally heale the woondes of scorpions. I know one that experimentally prooved what a rod in lye could do with the curfeste boy in a citty; and founde the imparative moode a better oratour then the optative. It may fortune the same man hath such a whipfy-doxy in store for a jack-sauce, or unmannerly puppy, as may schoole him to turne-over a new leafe, and to cry the pittifullest *peccavi* of a wofull penitent. For my part, whom at this instant it smartly behooveth to be resolute, I confesse I was never more entangled and intricated in the discourse of mine owne reason, then since I had to do with this desperate Dick, that dareth utter and will cogge any thing to serve his turne. Not to confute him in some respectes were perhaps better; to confute him is necessary. Were it possible to confute him in not confuting him, I am of opinion that it would be done; (for insolency or any injury would be repressed by order of law, where order of law is a sufficient remedy; and silence, in some cases, were the finest eloquence, or scorne the fittest answere) and haply I could wish not to confute him in confuting him (for the discovery of cunnycatchers doth not greatly edifie some bad mindes); but seing he is so desperate that he will not be confuted with not confuting, I must desire his patience to be a little content to be confuted with confuting, rather after his or others guise then after my manner. *Answer not a foole according to his foolishnesse, lest thou also be like him: answer a foole according to his foolishnesse, lest he be wise in his owne conceit.* They are

both proverbes of the wifest master of sentences, of whom also I have learned, that to the horse belongeth a whip, to the asse a snaffle, to the fooles backe a rod. Let noman be wiser then Salomon : the fooles-head must not be suffred to coy itselfe, the colt must feele the whip, or the wand, the asse the snaffle or the gode, the fooles backe the rod or the cudgell. Let the colt, the asse, the foole beware in time, or he may peradventure feele them indeede ; with such a *tu autem*, as hath not often bene quavered in any language. If peace or treatie may not be heard, warre shall commaunde peace ; and he musle the mouth of rankest impudency, or fiercest hostility, that can do it, and do it otherwise then is yet imagined : and yet nothing like that inspired gentlewoman, whose peeue is the shott of the musket, or rather a shaft of heaven, swifter then any arrow and mightier then any hand-weapon, when curtesie is repulsed and hostility must enforce amity ; but otherwise how gratiouly amiable, how divinely sweet ! Gentlemen, looke upon the lovely glistering starre of the morning, and looke for such an orientall starre when she displayeth the resplendishyng beames of her bright wit and pure bounty. Meane-while, if some little shimering light appeare at a little crevise, I have my request ; and some pretty convenient leysure to take order with an other kinde of Straunge Newes in Westminster Hall. It is some mens fortune to have their handes full of unneedefull businesse attonce ; and for miselfe, I should make no great matter of two or three such glowing irons in the fier, were it not some small grieve, or discouragement, to consider that nothing can be perfectly or sufficiently performed by halves or fragments. Which necessary interruption hath bene the utter disgrace of the premisses, and a

great hinderance to my larger discourfes, more ample trifles. I can but crave pardon, and prepare amendes as leysure and occasion may affourde opportunity. Leaned wittes can skilfully examine, and honest mindes will uprightly consider circumftances with courteous regarde of favour, or due refpect of reafon; in whose onely indifferency, as in a safe and fweet harborough, I refofe my whole affiance and securitie as heretofore. And fo for this prefent I furceafe to trouble your gentle curtefies; of whose patience I have (according to particular occafions) fometime unmannerly but modeftly, often familiarly but fincerely, moft—what freely but confideratly, alwayes confidently but refpectively, in every part fimplly, in the whole tedioufly, prefumed under correftion. I writ onely at idle howers that I dedicate onely to *idle howers*, or would not have made fo unreafonably bold in no needfuller difcourfe then *the Prayfe or Supercrogration of an Affe*. This 27 of Aprill: 1593. Your mindefull debtour, G. H.

FINIS.



ERROURS ESCAPED IN THE PRINTING.

With certaine Additions to be inferted.

<i>Page.</i>	<i>Faultes.</i>	<i>Amended.</i>
26.	For angoy, read	agony.
31.	fcholeth,	fchooleth.
49.	bewixt,	betwixt.
67.	railing stile, without the two prickes, or colon.	
85.	very minifter,	every minifter.
90.	infringment,	infringement.
98.	not will,	will not.
107.	looker-on,	lookers-on.
121.	fuch sweating,	fuch a sweating.
139.	or discourfer,	or a discourfer.
147.	thy riot,	by riot.
201.	furprifes,	furprifes.
205.	at the leaft,	or the leaft.
219.	Orientall,	Orient.

Know alfo, gentle Reader, that it was the Writers meaning to deuide this treatife into three bookes; the Second beginning at the *Advertifement to Pap-hatchet, and Martin Mar-prelate*, the Third at, *So then of Pappadocio*; but in the originall, or uncorrected, copy there was not any fuch divifion exprefly fett-downe: neyther were the additions following inferted in their proper places, but annexed to the end of the Third booke, and noted thus.

In the *First Booke*, page 46, after *Cloude*, infert. What fpeake I of one, or two Englifh paragons? or what fhould I blafon the gallant and brave meeters of Ariofto and Taffo,

always notable, sometimes admirable? All the noblest Italian, French, and Spanish poets have in their severall veines Petrarchised, that is, looved wittily, not grosely; lived civilly, not lewdly; and written deliciously, not wantonly. And it is no dishonour for the daintiest, or divinest Muse to be his scholler, whom the amiablest invention and bewtifullest elocution acknowledge their master. All posteritie.

In the *Second Booke*, page 77, after *edifeth*, insert. Plato comparing Aristotle and Xenocrates together; Xenocrates, quoth he, needeth a spurre; Aristotle a bridle. And if princes or parlaments want a goade, may not subjects or admonitions want a snaffle? Is there pretence for libertie to advise the wisest, or for zeale to pricke forward the highest, and no reason for prudence to curbe rashnesse, or for autoritie to reane licentiousnesse? May judgement be whoodwinked with frivolous traditions, and cannot phantastic be enveigled with newfangled conceites? Superstition and credulitie

In the *same booke*, page 87, after *Innovation*, insert. And I hope he was not greatly unadvised that, being demaunded his opinion of the eldership in question, answered, he conceived of the *eldership* (as it is intended, and motioned in England) as he thought of the *elder-tree*, that whatsoever it appeared in shewe, it would in triall prove frutelesse, feedelesse, bitter, fraile, troublous, and a friend to furling waves and tempestuous stormes. And being further pressed touching the forward zeale of dowie Martin Seniour, lively Martin Junieur, pert Penry, lusty Barrow, and some other bragge reformistes (for that rowling stone of innovation was never so turlled and tumbled as since those busie limmes began to rowse and besturre them more then all the prag-

matiques in Europe) when young Phaeton, quoth he, in a presumptuous resolution would needes rule the chariot of the funne, as it might be the temple of Apollo, or the church of S. Paule, or some greater province (for the greater province, commonwealth, or monarchy, the fitter for Phaetons reformation) his suddaine ruine ministred matter of most lamentable teares to his deare mother and loving sisters; in somuch that they were pittifully chaunged, as some write into *elder-trees*, as some, into *poplars*. *Sic flevit Clymene sic, et Clymeneides altæ*: as it might be the mournefull church, and her wailing members, wofully transfewed into *elders*, or *poplars*. Good my masters

In the *Third booke*, page 205, after *Pollicie*, insert: that learning was to be commended, but lucre and preferment to be studied; that he sowerh in vaine which moweth not his own advantage; that nothing was to be bestowed without hope of ufance; that love or hatred availe not, but where they may prevaile; that affections were to be squared by occasion, and reasons to be framed by proffit; that names of partialities, sectes, and divisions, either in civil or religious causes, were but foolish wordes, or pelting termes; and all were to be estimated by their valuation *in esse*; that the true squire, and right geometricall compasse of things, is habilitie, the onely thing that by a soveraine prerogative deserveth to be called *substance*; that according to Chawcers English, there can be little *adling* without much *gabbing*, that is, small getting without great lying and cogging; that it was

These sower additions in their severall bookes I commend to the correction of the curteous reader; and so take my leave.

FINIS.

TO THE RIGHT WORSHIPFULL
my very good friend, M. Doctour Harvey.

Good M. Doctour Harvey, promise I account debt, especially to so especiall a frend ; and therefore I have now againe laboured to discharge miselfe of it. I would I were of desert to set forth your long-deserved prayse, and of habilitie to expresse your singular habilities in stile, knowledge, and other most commendable vertues. What is in my power the least of your frendes shall commaunde ; what is not, I can but wish ; which I would most earnestly wish, if that might serve, though I never should wish more. I will not trouble your graver studies, but pray for your healthes continuance ; and will most willingly performe more, if occasion serve.

Oxford, this 10 of July, 1593.

Yours ever to commaunde,
 JOHN THORIUS.

SONET.

*Defam'd by one who most himselfe defameth,
 Write, worthy Harvey, for the wise applaude thee :
 Shame be his hyer that fowly himselfe shameth,
 And would of thy deserved right defraude thee.
 And if you force the undeserved wrong,
 Wherewith some simple ignorant dislaines thee,
 You in your wisedome may excede as long,
 As he in folly foolishly disdaines thee :
 For sharpe-cyde Equitie hath descride to all*

*Th' injurious wayne that fettes his penne to schoole,
 Whose railing tendes unto your wisedomes fall,
 And prooves all fonde to proove himfelfe a foole.
 Which monstrous folly would be leaft in haft,
 As wisedomes age will make him know at laft.*

JOHN THORIUS.

INCLOSED IN THE SAME LETTER.

And that I might not be held laft in remembraunce, though abfent, that in your prefence have fought the felfe-proffering caufe of after-memory, I have once more (as he that devoteth himfelfe and his poore labours to your good liking), how badly you may fee, but how hartely I would you could fee, or I could fay, writ thefe my pure devotions and zealous lines, with as true defire to honour yourfelfe, according to your worth, as I have bene wanting the defert, which your curteous nature hath affourded me. I requeft, fir, but your acceptance and your favour, which if I gaine, I have got more then my due : and fo wifhing your continuall bliffe, I ende, as one with oft prayers defiring to be held

Your bound by much defert,

ANTONY CHEWT.

SONET.

*Proccede, moft worthy lines, in your difdaine
 Againft the false fuggeltions you abuse,
 Whose rafcall ftile deferved hath to gaine
 The hatefull title of a railing Mufe.*

*Doubtleffe the wifest, that shall chaunce to read you
 In true judiciaall of a quiet thought,
 Will give applause unto the wit that bread you,
 And you shall winne the good that you have sought.
 Winne more : and since the foole defames you still,
 The foole whom shame hath stained with fowle blott,
 Performe on him your discontented will :
 Fame shall be your mcede, Shame shall be his lott :
 And so proceeding, you shall so redeeme
 The name that he would drowne in blacke esteeme.
 Subscribed SH. WY.
 for SHORES WIFE.*

SUR L'APOLOGIE DE MONSIEUR LE TRES-DOCTE ET
 TRES-ELOQUENT DOCTEUR HARVEY : PAR LE
 SIEUR DE FREGEUILLE DU GAUT.

*Celuy qui provoqué publie sa defense
 Peut avecques raison sa cause déployer ;
 La Loy de Talion ne peut moins qu'ottroyer
 Juste permission de repayer l'offence.
 Mais celuy qui enflé a escrire commence
 A diffamer autrui, tachant a s'employer,
 De droit ne peut pretendre adveu ou bon loyer,
 Ains l'infame intenté luy vient pour recompense.
 F'aime pourtant par tout un stile moderé,
 Mesmes si on respond au sot demesuré,
 Car on n'a point raison d'imiter sa sottise.
 Marri sui mon d'Harvey de te voir provoqué,
 Mais tres-aïse qu'estant indignement piqué,
 Ta docte responce est eloquente et raffise.*

HIS SONET, THAT WILL JUSTIFIE HIS WORD, AND DEDICATETH NASHES S. FAME TO IMMORTALITIE.

*A dame, more sweetly brave then nicely fine,
Yet fine as finest gentlewomen be,
Brighter then diamant in every line,
Is Penniles so witlesse still? quoth she.
If Nash will felly gnash, and rudely slash,
Snip-snap a crash may lend S. Fame a gash.
Skill read the ryme, and put it in Truthes purse :
(Experience kisseth Reconcilements hand)
If warning-peece be scorn'd, Spite may heare worse :
Though Looove no warriour be, Right leades a bande.
How faine would Curtesie these jarres surcease !
How glad would Charitie depart in peace !
But if Sir Rash continue still Sir Swash,
He lives that will him dash, and lash, and sqwash.
Hæc quoque culpa tua est : hæc quoque pœna tua est.*

AN OTHER OCCASIONALL ADMONITION.

*Fame row's'd herselfe, and gan to swash about :
Boyes swarm'd, youthes throng'd, bloude's swore, brutes
rear'd the howt ;
Her meritorious worke, a wonderclowte !
Did ever Fame so bravely play the lowte ?
I chaunc'd upon the ryme, and wondred much
What courage of the world, or mister wight
Durft terrible S. Fame so rashly tuch,
Or her redoutable bull begging knight.*

Incontinent I heard a piercing voyce,
 Not Ecchos voyce, but shriller then a larke :—
Sith Destiny allottes no wiser choyce,
Pastime appose the Pickle-herring clarke.
 Quiet thy rage, imperious Swish-swash,
 Or woe be to thy horrible trish-traff.
Eft benè, non potuit dicere : dixit, Erit.

AN APOSTROPHE TO THE HEALTH OF HIS
 ABUSED FRENDES.

Live, father sweete ; and miscreant varlets dye,
That wrong my parent hart, and brother eye.
Decrest of eyes, contemne thy caitive foes :
Kindest of hartes, enjoy thy firme repose.
Sky, with a patron eye aspect thy eye,
That eye espoused to the virgin sky :
Art, with a loover hart preserve that hart,
That hart, devoted to the heavenly art.
Blessings, descend from your empyreal throne,
And lend a bounteous care to suppliant mone.
 Ambrosiall springes of cleereft influence,
 Fountaines restorative of cordiall blisse,
 Deigne, zeale, prostrate your tendrest indulgence,
 And soverainly redresse that is amisse.

L'ENVOY.

Volumes of thanks and prayse your store combine,
In passionatest hymnes and psalmes divine.

THE PRINTERS POSTSCRIPT.

Sweet gentlemen, having committed the premisses to the presse, and acquainting certaine learned and fine men with some other of the commendatory letters and sonnets of M. Thorius and M. Chewt, there was such an especiall liking conceived of two other their writings, that I was finally entreated, or rather overtreated, to give them also their welcome in print ; as not the unfittest lines that have bene published to intertaine lasie howers, or to employ drowisie eyes. Sometime in the bravest shoves there is little performed ; and sometime a poore publicane may worke as great a worke of Supererogation as a proude Pharise. I am not the meekest to blase other mens armes, and they are best furnished to be their owne tongues, that can so well pleade for themselves and their frendes. I can but recomende their learned exercise and mine own unlearned labour to your gentle acceptation.

TO THE RIGHT WORSHIPFULL, MY VERY ASSURED
FRIEND, M. DOCTOUR HARVEY.

My silence thus long, good M. Doctour Harvey, was not occasioned either by forgetfulness or by negligence, but but rather for want both of convenient leasure and of sufficient argument, being very unwilling to spend time often in writing of unmateriall lines, or to trouble any especiall friend with reading them. Yet because amitie is maintained by this looving kinde of intercourse, and because custome hath allowed that affection induced to expresse a carefull

memory of the continuance of frendship, by writing even upon small or no occasion, though the letter were signed with nothing else but, *Si vales, benè est, ego valeo*, lest longer silence might cause me to incurre just reprehension, and that you may receive some slender token of my often thinking on you, I send you enclosed three *stanzacs*: though simple in conceit, or other regard, yet were they equall to my good will, they would undoubtedly excell, and should be some way futable to your right excellent gifts. If they please, or not displease, you, and may seeme worthy, or not altogether unworthy to serve as foiles with my other sonnets, which you received before, to those much worthier verses which you have of much happier poets then miselfe, you may therein do your pleasure, whereto onely they are consecrated. Thus hoping that you are perswaded of me, as of one affectionatly your owne to use and commaunde at your appointment, I leave you with my most hartly and humble recommendations.

Oxford: the 3 of August, 1593.

Yours alwayes at commaunde,

JOHN THORIUS.

STANZAES.

*Among the Greekes, sweete Homers copious verse
 Forgoing times to Fames swift winges commended:
 The Latins Virgils noble worke rehearse:
 Nor yet in these were auncient prayes ended.
 Demosthens rich stile thorough Greece was blazed,
 And Tullyes forcing toungue made Roome amazed.*

*Our moderne age to egall with the passed,
 The Italian pleasing Muse hath done her best ;
 The learned French pennes have themselves surpassed ;
 And worthy English wittes have bannisht rest.
 Midst whom who not emblaſon Harveys name,
 Wrong him, themſelves, and Englands growing fame.
 Yeelding fond Naſh, thy glory ſhalt not ſtaine,
 But rather ſhalt encrease thy prayſe hereby :
 Thy friendes ſhalt know thy judgement not ſo vaine,
 But thou diſcernes where true deſert doth fly.
 And thy deſert by ſo much ſhall ſeeme greater,
 By how much thou art knowne to know thy better.*

JOHN THORIUS.

Sir, ſuch a patheticall aſſe have I found deciphred in your
 moſt learned and witty diſcourſe of that poore creture, as I
 know will prove the eternall memorative of one M. Naſh,
 yet I, by experience, have found more, that it is the nature
 of a true aſſe (to which aſſe peradventure this was dedicated)
 that a *greene figge* being handſomly tyed to his chappes, he
 no ſooner ſmelleth it, but he followes his noſe ſo farre, that
 he ſcapeth fayre in uneeven ground, if he breaketh not his
 necke. And this note I would not but impart unto you,
 as a caveat worthy to be remembered amongſt other ſecrets
 of that beaſt ; for doubtleſſe your philoſophicall aſſe will
 make alchimy upon it. I pray you diſpoſe of it at your
 beſt pleaſure. When any other ſuch memorandum fortunes
 into my hand you ſhall ſee it ; and ſo in haſt recommending
 you to your better ſtudies, I reſt, Sir,

at your ſervice,

AN. CII.

THE ASSES FIGG.

*So long the Rhenish furie of thy braine,
Incens'd with hot fume of a stilliard clime,
Lowd-lying Nash, in liquid termes did raine,
Full of absurdities, and of flaundrous ryme :*

*So much thy pot-jests, in a tapster humour,
(For that's the quintessence of thy Newgate fashion)
Thy toffspot majesty, and thy fame did rumour,
In wondrous agonyes of an alehouse passion :*

*So well thy wydemouth'd, or thy oisterwhore phrase
(Yet gentry bragges her of thy lowsie degree)
Aptly hath knowne thine armory to blase
In termes peculiar unto none but thee :*

*So soone five penniworth of thy groser witt
(Yet thou art witty as a woodcock would be)
More then autenticall hath learn'd to gett
Thy Muse intituled as it truly should be :*

*And now so neatly hath thy railing merit
(I should have said Ramme-ally meditations)
Procur'd applause unto thy Clarret spirit,
And sack-soft miseries of thy confutations :*

*That now each ivy-bush weepes her teares in ale :
The fish-wives commonwealth, alack ! forlorne,
Moornes in small drink, sharp, single, sowre, and stale ;*

*And thy long-booted gentry, ragged and torne,
Wailes new petitions to the diuels good grace,
Although the last, God knowes, gott little meede.*

*But thou'lt to hell, when shiftes can have no place,
Perhaps to hanging too, when time shall neede,
Yet first wilt ride, raile, ryme me downe to hell!
(Oh! but beware strange bugges at such a game)
I have a trick to teach a goose to spell,
Himselfe an Ass, out-off his Asses name.*

AN. CII.

FINIS.





